

Nicolai Levashov

The Final Appeal to Mankind

Volume 1

**San Francisco
1997**

Translated from Russian into English by **Alexander Nudelman**

Illustrations by **Nicolai Levashov**

Text Editors:

Barbara G. Koopman, M.D., Ph.D.

Richard A. Blasband, M.D.

Editorial Assistant: **George Orbelian**

Content

Preface 1	4
Preface 2	6
Introduction	9
The Third Appeal to Mankind.....	14
Chapter 1. The formation of planet Earth. The synthesis of non-living matter	22
Chapter 2. The emergence of life on Earth	26
Chapter 3. Psi-fields in nature and in the evolution of intelligence	42
Chapter 4. Formation of the ecological system of planet Earth.....	56
Chapter 5. Evolutionary cycles on planet Earth: the multidimensionality of life.....	63
Chapter 6. The evolution of the spirit, the organism and intelligence	69
Appendix 1. Derivation of the Formula for Species Self-Regulation.....	88
Appendix 2. Derivation of the Formula for Ecological Systems	92
Appendix 3. List of illustrations.....	95
Other author's books	123
Books in the Process of Writing.....	Error! Bookmark not defined.

Copyright © 1994 by Nicolai Levashov

All rights reserved. No part of this book may be reproduced in any form or by any electronic or mechanical means including information storage and retrieval systems without permission in writing from the author. Published by Nicolai Levashov. First edition.

www.levashov.org
www.levashov.info
www.levashov.name

Come, tell me, what's the bliss of knowledge,
The Soul's greatness lies wherein?
Is it not in the premonition, that
All that matters is—as yet,—to be?..

Finality, Infinity — before me,
Careening, will blue-streak, as one
Eternity its secret will disclose,
Those fetters' burden will be gone.

The Soul, open to Knowledge,
Beauty Supreme will consummate
My daring Dream, your final message
I will begin to understand...

In plain defiance of understanding
Beckons to us the fleeting Truth—
A flash, a glimpse—just for the taking?
The flash, the glimpse—a crafty ruse?...

My flimsy scull upon the Sea of Knowledge
I sent adrift, contesting elements,
The truths, revealed to me, were worth the passage—
wisdom supreme ignites the Universe...

En route I came across superior reason,
Initiated into mysteries arcane,
I proved my mettle on the trek, that wasn't easy –
Now let me show my Quest for Truth was not in vain...

Nicolai Levashov

Preface 1

It is a great honor and privilege to play a role in the production of this work.

As a physician and doctor of humanities, I find it speaking to my intellect even while addressing the deepest aspirations of my soul.

Nowadays, we are flooded with New Age books telling us how to meditate, visualize, be “mindful” or eat right. It is a clear sign to me that both religion and modern science have sorely failed us. At the same time, we are besieged with data from the information revolution, yet find ourselves thrust deeper and deeper into ignorance and darkness. The more we access, the less rationally we function.

Among this plethora, Nicolai Levashov’s book stands out as unique and unprecedented in the history of the planet. It lights a way into the darkness and unfolds a scientifically-based, multidimensional reality that jolts us out of our frozen, linear, all-or-nothing binary thinking. It stretches our grey cells, but richly rewards us if we permit ourselves to receive and assimilate what it has to offer. It will destroy a host of paradigms for us—many from modern physics—and will invite us to follow step by step the development of a world-view far different from the myths fed into our circuits through ignorance or malice.

So this is a demanding book—replete with mathematical formulas and magnificent illustrations—transmitting information of thrilling, soul-shaking proportions. One needs to navigate carefully and scientifically as this new world-view unfolds—from the birth of planet Earth to the evolution of the soul and the meaning of human destiny. You will not find this information in your computers—nor anywhere else.

The present volume, the first of a series, shows us how the same cosmic processes govern such seemingly disparate events as survival after death, the flight of migratory birds, reincarnation and the disintegration of an atom. The author brings to bear his encyclopedic knowledge of a multitude of fields—biology, physiology, medicine, genetics, physics, astrology, etc., to transcend by light-years the science of today. The intent is to give the reader an overview of fundamental cosmological issues about man and the universe. The book is, in a sense, a skeleton which will be fleshed out in subsequent works, but still provides the reader with the “bare bones” knowledge upon which to build.

It also contains an extraterrestrial document delivered by a renowned 1929 Nobel Prize nominee of impeccable integrity—Nicholas Roerich, a great Russian artist, scientist, archeologist and educator—whose works are still on view at the New York museum that bears his name. The first chapter introduces us to the genesis of planet Earth and its six spheres — and to the recurrent theme of how a critical range of numerical values determines creation or destruction. Examples abound in our everyday life — critical ranges for our blood pressure, body temperature, blood pH, etc., outside of which we could not survive. We shall see this shown in many ways in the whole fabric of creation — how existence or non-existence turns on a narrow spectrum of values: for example, in the emergence of life from the non-living (chapter 2);

the formation of a functioning bee colony (chapter 3); the emergence of intelligence (chapter 6) and the soul's odyssey toward higher and higher planes of consciousness (chapter 6). And these are but some of the fundamental issues for which modern science — dead-ended and bankrupt — can offer us no answers.

A word about Nicolai, the man.

Personality-wise, he is free of ego and full of kindness, affability, ebullience and humor. And he totally shuns any attempt to turn him into a guru, despite his awesome knowledge and power. My personal association with Nicolai is now going on a year and a half. With a professional background in science and the humanities, I feel strategically placed to grasp some of the momentous implications of his work on this planet.

As I attend occasional seminars or observe his work on subjects, I am struck by the incredible sophistication of his technology. He is no mystic, but navigates with ease in multidimensional realms of consciousness far beyond our wildest dreams — those of us who would follow must constantly shift our paradigms and concepts of reality. His science of today is so far advanced as to put quantum theory on a par with the abacus! The present volume is eloquent testimony to this. For those who dare to traverse these realms it is a voyage of discovery that could bring unparalleled enlightenment to the world and advance man's evolution by countless millennia.

Barbara G. Koopman, M.D., Ph.D.

*Diplomate, American Board of Psychiatry
and Neurology, former attending staff member
Mount Sinai Hospital, New York City*

Preface 2

It is a great honor and privilege to help bring this book to the world. I know that many of you reading it for the first time will find in it rational answers to the most profound life-long questions: the origin of life, of man, of man's place in his world and the cosmos, and the nature of the soul.

The work speaks for itself: it is so original that many will have difficulty believing that so much information could have come from the mind of one person. It would be a mistake, however, to think that the information given in *The Final Appeal to Mankind* was received by Levashov from some higher authority. We are all too inclined to "pass the buck" of the responsibility for our lives, to some entity beyond us. Indeed, I believe that what Levashov has found about man and his nature are things that we could have known long ago had man evolved naturally and had the courage to ask the right questions.

Nicolai Levashov is endowed with remarkable abilities to consciously move his spirit outside his body to other spiritual and temporal dimensions, and to see within and mentally influence living and non-living matter both locally and at a distance. While these talents provide information not readily available to most people and permit Levashov to perform mental experiments testing his working hypotheses, for the most part the discoveries documented here are the product of Levashov's unrelenting search for the truth using a process of thought that is scientific in the best sense of the word, but without being mechanistic nor mystical.

It is difficult for those of us who have been enculturated in mechanistic reductionistic science to imagine that there could be another way of investigating nature that would yield consensually valid, repeatable findings with predictive value. Yet there is an entire tradition of such a process of investigation that preceded, then paralleled, the rise of mechanism, but which was never embraced by the scientific community of the time. Practiced by few, this more functional thought process remained hidden from general view, or the findings generated by this process were irrationally dismissed as "mysticism." The few in modern times who did utilize a more "functional" thought process were scientific thinkers such as Goethe¹, Rudolph Steiner², the French philosopher Henri Bergson³, and the physician and scientist, Wilhelm Reich⁴, who formalized the process.

The key to their process of thought and investigation was what Goethe called "active, imaginative perception," that is, the reliance on subjective sensation and mental imagery to apprehend and comprehend the object under investigation. This

¹Bortoft, Henri, *The Wholeness of Nature*, Lindisfarne Press, 1996.

² Steiner, Rudolph, *The Course of My Life*, trans. Olin Wanamaker Hudson, New York, Anthroposophic Press, 1951.

³ Bergson, Henry, *Creative Evolution*, New York, The Modern Library, 1911.

⁴ Reich, Wilhelm, *Ether, God and Devil*, Orgone Institute Press, Rangeley, 1949.

demanded a trust in the clarity of one's sensations and perceptions, an unobstructed contact with oneself and the external world. In the case of Steiner and Reich, what was harvested from this thought process was often objectified in the physical world through experimentation, yielding many remarkable products including means of significantly fructifying the soil without chemicals for farming, modifying the weather, and shifting bioenergetic potentials in the treatment of disease.

In contrast to a functional science, it has been one of the explicit tasks of mechanistic science to totally (or as much as possible) exclude the human subjective element from the investigatory process. However, the advent of quantum mechanics and the uncertainty principle indicated that this was in many cases not only a practical impossibility, but, thought a few daring scientists, undesirable. This seemed to mean little, however, to the vast majority of scientists, who conditioned by mechanism, continued to refuse to acknowledge their role in the outcome of experiments and dismissed those who did with derision.

Among the exceptions are a few scientific investigators working on the cutting edge of consciousness, whereby experimental subjects without any particular psychic ability can, through conscious mental intention, significantly influence inanimate machines (random event generators) and accurately mentally view scenes mentally at a distance. Further, these effects can be obtained not only "non-locally", that is, at apparently limitless distance between operator and object, but also independent of side-real time⁵. Simply stating that Levashov thinks and functions in a non-mechanistic way does not, however, begin to convey the depth of his ability to penetrate into problems of natural science or the extent of his mental powers as a "psychotronic" healer, clairvoyant, and psychokineticist.

I have studied psychotronic healing intensively with Nicolai for the last four years and assisted in several experiments correlating EEG output with mental intention and out-of-body states. His knowledge and understanding of most areas of science and medicine is extraordinarily broad and deep: In discussion of medical problems he never fails to astound me with how much he knows about the fundamentals of normal and pathological physiology and many of the flaws in reasoning in traditional medical thinking. His system of psychotronic healing (the effect of the power of the mind on living and non-living matter, to be discussed in detail in later volumes) is based upon the deepest understanding of the fundamentals of what is correct in traditional medicine and his own discoveries in physics, biology, ecology and the role of the spiritual bodies in health and disease.

Most of the findings described in the chapters of this book are the bedrock of psychotronic healing: they are tools of the healer, just as calculus is that of the engineer. Without their use success in healing, no matter what the healing discipline (including traditional allopathic medicine), can only be incomplete.

⁵ Jahn, Robert and Brenda Dunne, *Margins of Reality*, New York, Harcourt, Brace, Jovanovich, 1987.

Nicolai Levashov was born in 1961 in Kislovodsk, Russia. As a child he was not aware of anything unusual about himself, but later, as he grew and developed, came to realize that he had remarkable parapsychological powers. It was not, however, until he studied the scientific approach in university that he came to understand what, exactly, these powers were and how they could affect living and non-living substance.

This was accomplished through detailed, extensive questioning and analysis of what was given as the fundamental laws of nature. Not only did this provide answers not previously anticipated by science, but the process further developed his mental abilities and the growth of his spiritual bodies. In 1984 he graduated from Kharkovsky University with a major in Radiophysics (the equivalent of a master's degree in the United States). In the following years he worked as a consultant in a variety of research and engineering firms. In 1990 he received a degree of Specialist in Psychotronics, highest category, which granted him the privilege of teaching specialists and the license to do corrective healing with large groups of people.

Subsequently he taught psychotronic healing in medical schools in Russia and trained over 300 physicians there in his techniques. In 1991 he received the highest recognition in his field, Magister in Psychotronics, (higher than a doctorate in the United States), from the International Center of Phenomena in Kiev, which is associated with the Ukrainian Ministry of Health. At the end of 1991 he moved to the United States.

Since 1989 Mr. Levashov has appeared on many television and radio programs in Russia, Europe and the United States as an expert on parapsychological phenomena, the most recent on CNN, where he demonstrated psychokinetic effects and discussed the use of psi warfare by the United States and other countries.

The Final Appeal to Mankind was written between 1987 and 1992. The present volume consists of the first six chapters of the complete document. Volume 2, containing the remaining chapters, will be published before the end of 1997.

Alexander Nudelman, a Russian-born engineer did a literal translation from Russian into English. It was the task of the text editors, Dr. Koopman and myself, to edit and rework this transliteration. This was accomplished with the assistance of George Orbelian, a Russian-speaking Russian-American.

Richard A. Blasband, M.D.

Introduction

[Download illustrations – 8,696 MB](#)

The universe...the mystery of Life! How did life begin from non-living matter?

How did it happen that inorganic atoms, combining in various orders and quantities, created organic molecules, which then evolved into living matter?

The enigma of life....How did it all begin, how did it unfold and how did it bring forth such a multiplicity of living forms?

Where did man come from when he first appeared on planet Earth? Did he develop slowly according to the Darwinian theory of evolution? Was he thrust from the Garden of Eden in order to expiate his sins before God? Or if not God's doing, who brought man to this planet, when, and for what purpose? And how can we account for the rich diversity of all the races of man?

How did we come to possess the capacity to think? What happens to us when we die and what awaits us after death?

If there is a soul — what is it? Where does it go when we die? If heaven and hell exist, then where are they? Why do we not see them, as have those who experience clinical death and then return to life with reports of being welcomed by angels and drawn into a tunnel of light? What happens at the moment of conception and how does the human embryo develop?

What is reincarnation? Do we live one or many times on this planet? Is it possible for us to see into the past and future and to move through vast realms of time and space without a craft?

Are we alone in the universe?

The answer is obvious if we are willing to stretch the boundaries of our conventional thinking. Suppose that one hundred years ago extraterrestrials sent us a message in the form of radio signals requesting contact with intelligent beings on Earth. How could we have heard or responded? Without radio receivers and decoders to pick up or decipher such signals, we could not have had an inkling that we were being contacted.

Added to this, most other civilizations in space function on a vastly different developmental level, transmitting and receiving not through radio signals, but telepathically and holographically.

Thousands of signals continually bombard us from space in the form of three-dimensional holograms broadcasting the desire to establish contact with man on Earth. But most people are unable to understand or process this information. The few who can register and understand it translate it into common, everyday language, but sadly, despite their efforts, these messages fall on deaf ears. This is what happened

earlier in this century, in 1929, when Nicolas Roerich delivered the Third Appeal from the Coalition of the civilizations—it was simply ignored.⁶

There are billions of civilizations in space. Some are still at the early stages of their evolution, while others like our Earth civilization, have yet to emerge; there are also those who have already reached high levels in their development. This is a normal and natural process. Our own civilization will shortly have to undergo its birth into the cosmos. If we succeed, we shall reach a qualitatively new and advanced level of development. Using only the power of thought, man will be able to influence the planet's ecology, modify the weather, abort natural disasters and heal the wounds inflicted upon nature by our senseless acts. We shall be capable of truly understanding ourselves and our abilities.

Time travel to the past and future and space travel over billions of light years will not seem, as some believe, “miraculous or delusional.” Rather, in times to come, if and when we are willing to accept the new knowledge required to elevate us to the next level of understanding of natural law, these things will be as commonplace as air travel is today.

If the human race refuses to adopt this new knowledge, Earth's emerging civilization will remain stillborn, destroying itself before it fully develops. I know that for many this assertion will appear outrageous and will stir up angry protestations. They will say, “Our civilization has achieved such tremendous success everywhere! Man has walked in space, traveled to the moon, and soon will reach Mars, etc. Science, culture, and art are rapidly developing, especially in the last hundred years! Currently we have an information revolution!”

The Final Appeal to Mankind may strike some readers as harsh and absolute. But try to listen and understand before jumping to conclusions. As Jesus exhorts, “He that hath ears, let him listen.”⁷ It is an exercise in futility to offer food to a starving man if he refuses to eat: He will die of starvation no matter what you offer him. The new knowledge and the willingness to share it are available to the peoples of the Earth, but it will not save them if even at the brink of disaster they refuse to accept what is offered. If this should happen, regrettably our only recourse would be to patch up what can be salvaged and prolong the time left for Earthmen to come to a final decision before they die. So you who are still asleep, wake up before that sleep becomes eternal! In Jesus' day there was still time to postpone awakening; this is no longer the case. We have run out of time! The human race has reached a critical point in its history, a real, tangible “doomsday.” This is not some empty abstraction, another “end of the world” story that has been repeatedly foretold in the course of our history yet never came to pass. Most of us have stopped reacting to such warnings and have become confident that the end of the world will never come.

⁶ See “The Third Appeal to Mankind” following this introduction.

⁷ New Testament, Matthew Chapter 11, verse 15. King James Version.

What is this doomsday, this crisis in human evolution? We may call it by many different names, but its significance is not in its label, but in what it really forebodes.

And we may well ask: What is the significance of mankind in the cosmological picture? As I will show, man has a most significant role to play in the development of civilization on a cosmic scale, but this role has remained hidden for thousands of years. Ignorance, lies and failure to grasp and understand the basic laws of nature have served to keep man's true destiny hidden from himself. The laws of nature function whether or not man understands them, but from now on humanity will be unable to survive and progress without this understanding. Frankly, unless man does learn to live his life according to these fundamental laws of nature, there will be no one left to evolve on our majestic, blue planet Earth.

No nuclear war is required for man's demise. If we continue to abuse and meddle with nature, without heeding her laws, we will self-destruct faster than a nuclear holocaust could dispatch us. We must be ever mindful of Christ's warning: "When the blind lead the blind they shall both fall into a pit."⁸

Only a century ago we were in no danger of extinction: now it is imminent and palpable. What is this sentence of death that hangs over our heads?

Over a period of billions of years, flashes of lightning in the Earth's atmosphere gave rise to a layer of ozone that made life on Earth possible by deflecting lethal radiation from outer space away from our atmosphere. Sea water actively absorbed the radiation thus enabling primordial life forms to develop within it. These early sea creatures continued evolving in the water until Earth's ozone layer was sufficient to deflect most of the radiation back into space. Only then did life migrate from the sea to solid land.

Beginning in 1961, the technology developed then and still in current use today destroyed 30% of the Earth's ozone layer. According to calculations, if we continue the present pace of our technological activities, such as repeated rocket launchings into space, within the next ten to twenty years the remaining ozone layer will be totally destroyed.

Ironically, the means of its destruction will be the very advances we so proudly hail as the pinnacle of our scientific achievement. Every living creature on land will perish under the impact of lethal radiation from outer space: only underwater creatures will survive and everything will start all over again from the beginning...

Compounding the problem, man in his ignorance and contempt has seriously disrupted nature's balance, causing the extinction of thousands of living species and the outbreak of lethal epidemics such as AIDS. How did this all come about?

At a certain crossroads on the path of his evolutionary journey, man took a wrong turn. As Socrates observed, "To know the world, you must first know yourself." People took no notice of this advice, but tried to master knowledge of the uni-

⁸ New Testament, Matthew, Chapter 15, verse 14. King James Version.

verse without the necessary prior knowledge of themselves. And thus their descendants, following in their footsteps, arrived at the present impasse.

No knowledge can ever be absolute, but one path can lead towards the truth, while the other leads away from it, despite their sharing a common starting point. How can one tell which leads where?

When man first tried to grasp the nature of the universe, his mind could not fathom the profusion of questions flooding him all at once. He then filled the gaps in his knowledge with axioms and postulates that allowed him to construct a working model of the universe. Had he pursued the correct path of knowledge, this model of the universe would have led him to a new and higher level of understanding, rending aside the veil of mystery from the unknown. This, in turn, would have made for an ever-deepening and fuller grasp of the universe.

In other words, had man pursued the correct path of knowledge, his expanding awareness would have left fewer gaps in his understanding and less need for filling them in with theoretical constructs. By contrast, his pursuit of the erroneous path gave rise to more and more theoretical gaps, a state of affairs which should serve as a warning. Modern science has more gaps than ever before and understands even less now about the fundamentals of nature, as shown by the fact that increasing amounts of experimental data tend to contradict what we have accepted as the basic laws of biology and physics; modern science is frightened to find itself on the brink of an abyss.

In medieval times, religion was the persecutor of science. For many years man fought for science's survival and finally triumphed. It would be a consummate tragedy if now modern science became the Grand Inquisitor of the New Knowledge — the new and deeper grasp of nature and natural law. This book, *The Final Appeal to Mankind*, is a beginning "alphabet" and "grammar" of the New Knowledge. It embodies answers to such questions as the nature and origin of the Earth; the structure and function of the seven planetary layers and why there are only seven; the riddle of biogenesis and the laws of evolution. You will come to know the origin of intelligence, the time of its emergence, and its essential characteristics; how mankind came to exist upon this planet; the great enigma of life and death, and what transpires after death.

You will also come to grasp the unity between microcosm and macrocosm, fathom the mystery of the black holes, the history and destiny of man, the nature of the universe and much, much more. The information offered here is neither mysticism nor science fiction; it is authentic, well-founded knowledge and it is up to you the reader to accept or reject it. Once again, let us remember the words of Christ: "Ask and it shall be given to you...Seek, and ye shall find...Knock, and it shall be opened unto you...For everyone that asketh, receiveth; and he that seeketh findeth; and to him that knocketh, it shall be opened."⁹

⁹ New Testament, Matthew Chapter 7, verse 7–8. King James Version.

And I, as author of this book, can only hope that I will not turn out to be “but one small voice crying out in the wilderness.”

Nicolai Levashov

The Third Appeal to Mankind

Presented in the year 1929 A.D

An appeal by the Coalition Group of Observers (CGO) to all intelligent inhabitants of the planet Earth, to the race calling itself “mankind”.

Delivered by E. Roerich and N. Roerich, intermediaries of Shambhala. 1929

This is the third and final Declaration of the CGO to people of the planet Earth. The CGO gave its **First Declaration** to the inhabitants of **Amuradgehature**, then the largest city on Earth **in the year 576 B.C.** The **Second Declaration** was presented to the inhabitants of **Tkaacetkoal**, the largest city on the American Continent **in the year 711 A.D.** The present **Declaration** to the people of Earth is basically identical to previous ones in content and is written in the most common languages on Earth: Chinese, Russian, English, and Spanish. The text was edited with a consideration for contemporary levels of the inhabitants’ knowledge and misconceptions.

The sole purpose of this **Declaration** is to propose negotiations in the near future between representatives of mankind and the Coalition in order to determine whether mankind is ready to become a member of the Coalition. The negotiations will be possible only upon your completion of certain preliminary conditions which will be given later. For a proper understanding of these conditions we shall offer a brief description of the true nature of the cosmos compared with the one resulting from mankind’s characteristic way of thinking.

By now mankind has a more accurate conception of the universe than it had at the time of the first and second Declarations. So, indeed, you recognize that the Earth is not flat and is not located in the center of the Universe: it rotates around the Sun, like the other planets; and you are certainly aware that the sun is not located in the center of the universe, but is just another star within the galaxy.

However, the most recent energy transformation, sustaining the activity of the stars (including your own sun) and permitting the existence of life on Earth is only one of many in the universe. Aside from these observations, the vast majority of your cosmological constructs are **in error**.

Your scientists’ belief that all universal laws are and always will be unvarying and that physical constants are unchanging is illusory. For example, the gravitational constant changes significantly even within your solar system, not to mention on any larger scale. This fact has led you to seriously miscalculate the size of galaxies and the distances between them, and has also produced the erroneous theory of a circumscribed universe and, only this year, another erroneous theory of an expanding universe. Your basic concept of three-dimensional space, which serves as a fundamental building block for your cosmological ideas, is also in error.

The physical world is always changing; there is nothing static in it, including spatial dimensions. Dimensions in space fluctuate, changing evenly over a very wide

range. The best condition for the beginning of organic life is a spatial dimension that equals $+p$ (3.1416...). Any significant deviation from that number will have a negative influence on life. At present the region of your solar system has a dimension of $+3.00017$. The nearness of that figure to the even number 3 (resulting in your three-dimensional concept of volume) simply misled you.

A gravitational vortex with a dimension of -3.15 is drifting close to the edge of the greatest concentration of stars in your galaxy. Even if it only barely grazes your galaxy, it threatens to wipe out all organic life on all the planets that do not have proper protection. This situation makes it imperative for you to become a member of the Coalition in the near future, at least within the next 6,500 earth years, so the Coalition will have enough time to help mankind to prepare and protect itself from the vortex.

Presently there are about 220,000 (two hundred twenty thousand) intelligent races in your galaxy, including yourselves, who are considering joining the Coalition. But please do not construe our warning about the vortex as an attempt to influence your decision.

You are in error regarding **the origin of life on Earth**. The solar system originated from a dust-like cloud, disseminated by the Coalition's construction corps in a certain region of the your universe that has the two conditions necessary for the initiation and development of life. This region is sufficiently remote from other stars and has a dimension of space close to $+p$.

You are mistaken **when you compare an intelligent race to a living individual**, thus envisioning the unavoidable deterioration and death of mankind in the near future. During the evolutionary process, about which you have only a very vague understanding, new species of living beings arise out of the old, and one's concern should be for the next generation: to have new, intelligent races on Earth originating from yours. Precisely this consideration must define the goals of an intelligent race.

Meanwhile, according to CGO observations, the human race has no such goal, nor even a semblance of one, leaving its development to chance and aiming all its efforts toward the gratification of temporary needs. Your errors in thinking should not be taken as accidental and transient. They are unavoidable and lasting due to the specific nature of your thought processes, which we shall now briefly explore.

Thought and the very existence of living matter have a common basis. (We remind you that we are forced to express ourselves in your language and at your level of knowledge, and because of this certain inaccuracies may occur). Your thinking and structure are the products of the limits of your logic. The search for logic is characteristic of your way of thinking, but any similarity with the way of thinking typical of the majority of intelligent races, which are members of the Coalition, ends right there. This fact compels many members of the CGO to doubt the correctness of regarding you as an intelligent race.

You analyze problems by thinking in terms of binary processes or alternatives, like an absolute "yes" or an absolute "no", which you accept as real. This is an irra-

tional process of thought used only by those with severely distorted structures. It compounds itself in the multistage analysis of complicated problems. At the same time the number of levels in your analysis is usually very small, even if the problem you are analyzing is quite complicated. The search for a solution comes down to choosing one out of two possibilities where two possible solutions exist, whereas the most correct solution lies somewhere in between.

The following analogy will be clear to your mathematicians: If one obtains answers to “yes” or “no” kinds of questions concerning a particular problem, the solution will be analogous to choosing one of the apices of an N-dimensional cube, whereas the range of possible solutions includes all points of N-dimensional space. To be exact, most of the time you erroneously err in the estimation of the real range of possible solutions which in reality are seldom quantitative.

As best as we can ascertain, in your scientific and juridical law, the meaning of each discovery or invention, the essence of any important idea, can be expressed by a simple sentence, consisting of a hundred words out of a 50,000 word vocabulary, including mathematical and other specific symbols. The total quantity of possible sentences of that vocabulary is represented by a very modest figure, 100. If we consider only those sentences that have an analytic function, that is to convey meaning — the number will be reduced to 50. Now, if we also eliminate those sentences that are grammatically correct but lack even the slightest discernible meaning, the quantity of meaningful sentences remaining will be reduced to 25. Finally, if we then select the false statements from true ones, being generous with the former in our evaluation, we have only **3-10** statements remaining that actually correspond to reality. Meanwhile, we know some examples of life forms from several other planets that are capable of showing at least the same number of various unconditioned reactions to different combinations of external stimuli that are quite consonant with reality; however these life forms cannot be called intelligent. There are such species on your planet too. Evidently, it would be more correct to consider humanity not intelligent, but a **potentially intelligent race**, because the limitations of your thought processes, as you should have already gathered, are not of congenital origin.

The human brain at birth is as impeccable a mechanism for thinking as are the organs of thought of many intelligent races in the universe. The problem is that the development of your thinking process from the very beginning took an absolutely wrong path. At the beginning of the creation of the thinking process, the capability of thinking was one of many potential reactions to the same information (**Fig. 1**). On this graph, labeled “**Logical Foundation**,” the intensity of perception of reaction to the influence of information is located on the ordinate. Acceptability of that reaction is located on the abscissa, with negative reaction to the left of zero, and positive reactions to the right of zero. The curves on the chart represent everything in nature that has not yet been processed by the anti-entropic activity of intelligence. The chaotic splashes of curve are readily explained by physiological threshold effects.

The development of intelligence involves not only the building of a complex system of logical thinking, but also reconstructing and improving the foundation which serves as a basis for that system.

As numerous examples from different intelligent races show, the reconstruction of a logical foundation according to the pattern shown in [Fig. 2](#) best fits the requirements for an accurate comprehension of nature. It is important to mention, however, that we know a few races in the universe who not only show that linear structure but also have some branches stretching out to infinity ([Fig. 3](#)). They constitute their own independent union of races, outside of the Coalition, because we could not find a language in common with them.

The principal difference between their way of thinking and ours is that the area delineating our foundation of logic is **finite**, while their is **infinite**. It is hard for us to survive the heavy impact of their positive and negative reactions to an informational input that extends out to infinity.

Man's primitive logical foundation has two major splashes to the right and to the left of zero, and also several minor ones. This fact shows once again that **man never had before nor does he now have any obstacles to the construction of his own logical foundation in accordance with the pattern of continuous (non-binary) logic generally accepted in the universe**. From the very beginning, man's intellect developed in a completely faulty manner, oriented only on those powerful splashes, so that it now approximates the appearance of the logical foundation shown in [Fig. 4](#). Those splashes to the right and left of zero are nothing but your absolute "yes" and "no," [your binary split] without which you are, in general, unable to imagine anything, even though only the force of habit stands in your way. This ridiculous splitting of your logical base into absolute conceptions of "yes" and "no" is the greatest obstacle to comprehending a state of being which today is only rudimentary in you.

Moreover, you have recently developed a theoretical elaboration of your system of logic that compounds, rather than corrects, your errors: your theoretical logical systems now operate with greater refinement of your binary conceptualizations, leaving out all other variants of logical decision-making ([Fig. 5](#)). These ludicrous theoretical elaborations, instead of being a move forward, are a step backward, even compared with the original, logical, foundation of human thinking described above.

This is because the area of the figure describing your logical foundation, instead of being equal to some finite number, becomes equal to zero. Thus, one of the most primitive functions, which has only two meanings, is taken as the basis of your thinking. A general summary shows that the larger the area describing a logical foundation, the more perfect is the process of thought.

Hence, regrettably, the inevitable but deserved conclusion is that if your system of apprehending reality can scarcely be called **thinking**, it must be **the most primitive of all those possible**. Your binary logic forces you to distort everything that is essential. Thus the natural series of numbers, which is possible in principle, is just an artificial mathematical trick that is only slightly consonant with reality, but it becomes for you the cornerstone of that mathematical foundation so familiar to the ma-

jority of humans. You try to quantify just about everything and at the same time you cannot even provide precise information about the strength of the wind, expressing it simply in binary concepts of “yes” and “no”, “it is” or “it isn’t” and, moreover, without the expectation of any meaningful understanding of those statements.

Arithmetical quantification led you to new problems, brought about more by the primitiveness of your thinking than by the exigencies of reality. So you waste your energy trying to solve them, seeing them as real anomalies of nature that are difficult to harmonize with your world view. One example: your dealing with rational and irrational numbers as if they had a real scale. Binary logic forces you to fragment and artificially separate solid perceptions into independent facts, occurrences, conceptions, and categories, artificially separating them one from the other.

Your limited logic and obsession with quantification forces you to believe that there is a finite number of attributes to an object or event and also to label each of them. This gives you the dubious opportunity of separating one attribute from another, a trick you call “abstraction.” The movement through the steps of abstraction to more common signs is, in your understanding, the only way (and the only right one), but in reality it takes you in the opposite direction from truth.

You believe that moving from the highest level of abstraction to the lowest common denominator is the only correct way to proceed. On the contrary, it is really just the opposite. It is no accident that all your abstract constructs, called philosophical systems, are self-contradicting, even though they are based on a common logic.

Step by step, descending into darkness along levels of abstraction, step by step, losing connection with reality, little by little your philosophical systems lose their orientation and finally at the “dead end” of their progression you are forced to answer the meaningless question about the priority of matter over spirit, by a “yes” or a “no.” Because of the weakness of your logical foundation **you are limited in your ability to finely differentiate between objects and events, basing your distinctions upon a variety of notations, which are quite chaotic and illogical even from the point of view of your own logic.** This is very easily proven, for instance, in the case of human language, where the distinctions are quite inexact.

Your method of communication, which you claim as one of the superior achievements of the human mind, is based upon the establishment of such meaningless differentiations. **If you calculate the number of meaningful sentences in your language, you will see how primitive it is as a method of informational exchange, and is, rather, a way to limit that process. And it is not an achievement of intellect, only a transient, dysfunctional step in the early stage of human evolution.**

Considering language as an instrument for both exchanging and conveying information, you have not yet noticed how much it impacts your way of thinking, how inevitably it forces you into the very same process of fragmentation and compartmentalization. Thus your ethics and esthetics, particularly, contain a multitude of conceptual pairs that are mutually contradictory, such as thesis and antithesis.

Your public and personal morals follow the same principles of polarizing ideas like “love—hate,” “good—evil,” “life—death,” and so on...

Even your own observation, that different nations attach different meanings to those antithetical concepts is of no help to you. In the course of time, the very meanings themselves keep changing. Meanwhile you think of yourselves as **a highly civilized race**, yet in a court of law you apply a “yes” or “no” criterion to determine whether a verdict of guilt or innocence is appropriate for a single individual. Under no circumstances would such criteria be acceptable for determining the fate of a nation. But you permit the categorical principles of “yes” or “no” to dominate even there, turning virtually the entire planet into an enormous jail for all nations.

Moreover, your binary system of logic allows you to entrust the destiny of all nations and the entire human race to a handful of individuals. In international politics this is your idea of “a state of peace” or “a state of war” with abrupt shifts of logic. You think that this is perfectly natural, without even considering whether it is rational, and pursue it with a truly absurd tenacity. The latest world war and the new one about to happen, prove that your precipitous development of technology has not propelled you into wisdom.

Because of the abrupt and almost instantaneous shifts of your social structures and international politics from one state to another, it is very difficult for us to make any prediction regarding your future development. For the last couple of thousand years, the CGO has observed that you are almost continuously at war with each other: because of the natural course of historical processes, it will take twelve thousand years before your warring will begin to diminish.

Nevertheless, the CGO is aware that there has been an accelerated development of intelligence by at least some individuals, and this consideration allows us to believe that this Declaration is not hopeless. However, any agreement between mankind and the Coalition can only be concluded after human beings have overcome their reprehensible habits.

Owing to the primitive state of your logic, the CGO is forced to be skeptical of the development of the human race in the following additional respects: your civilization’s attitude to ward technology and your personal fear of death. The development of technology in itself, is definitely a positive sign, which leads the CGO to favor the human race as intelligent, but the idealization of technology, and your assigning it a special role as the prime attribute of your civilization, is alarming to us. Historically, when separate regions of the Earth lacked direct communication, the human race developed haphazardly. It did achieve several experimental civilizations of different types, some of which were approved by the CGO.

Regrettably, when direct contact between different cultures finally appeared in the process of development and expansion, they could not coexist in peace. Crude, primitive and, because of these qualities, more powerful civilizations usually exterminated those that were more intelligent and humane, only to be exterminated, in turn, by an even cruder force.

Unfortunately, a **mechanistic civilization**, the most primitive of all, dominates the Earth at the present time. It encompasses the entire human race, keeps it under control, and will not give a new civilization the chance to emerge. Only if the mechanistic civilization self-destructs and man takes control into its own hands, will a new and different civilization emerge: one that will be more conducive to the essential well-being of the race.

The CGO hopes that this final Declaration, along with appropriate help from the Coalition, will initiate that transformation provided mankind shows a sincere desire to change. We wish, however, to point out that civilizations with centers in Amuradghepure, at the time of the First Declaration, and Tkaacetkoal, at the time of the Second Declaration, were more attuned to the needs of the human race than your contemporary mechanistic society.

As one of possible means of help, the CGO can provide the human race with detailed descriptions of those civilizations, to be used as models for a new civilization. One of our major criteria for judging a race as intelligent is where every member elevates collective intelligence above all else. Consequently, man as an intelligent being must prioritize the development of the collective racial intelligence. The functions of man are as follows: harvest all information from previous generations, add whatever is newly acquired from experience and perception, then pass it on to the next generation, increased and improved.

Chaotic fluctuations in the movement of an intelligent society's thought processes are necessary: after sifting through history one finds zigzags in the movement of thoughts that correspond to shifts in the changing objective picture of reality. The latter is unpredictable in direction, while the spectrum of thinking of any individual has a consistency during that individual's life span. Hence it follows that **each generation's transformation is necessary not for the preservation and continuation of the species, but for preservation of their cumulative intelligence as a race of intelligent beings**.

Therefore, considering the cosmic laws of Freedom of Will and Freedom of Choice, any hope you have that contact with extraterrestrial races will help to solve your ethical problems are groundless and impractical. The problem has a solution, but it is not what you think. Indeed, generally speaking it is not a problem at all. Moreover, we cannot offer the human race appropriate solutions, no matter how dire the situation might be, because each race has a right to decide its own destiny.

The CGO will maintain contact with mankind and its independent representatives to answer any questions and to provide help with any problem relating to personal character. But the main purpose of this Declaration is to warn you about the coming danger and apprise you of our offer to become a member of the Coalition. At the very first inquiry, the by-laws of the Coalition and a description of its structure may be handed over for study and publication by the government of any of the four largest countries, or by the Secretary of the League of Nations without any further provisos. If you decide to join the Coalition you will first have to undertake the re-

building of the logical foundation of your thinking according to guidelines common to the Coalition.

That stipulation is needed because your distorted way of thinking will cause a growing inferiority complex in anyone who joins, but, also primarily, because of basic differences in the thought process itself. This would lead to failure in the exchange of vital, perhaps very basic, information between the races of the Coalition and mankind. Regrettably, this Declaration is an example of such a flawed communication. At present, mankind is useless to the Coalition and vice versa.

Without the reconstruction of your thought processes, we are powerless even to lend you a hand to protect you from the vortex. As we see it, it will take you about six thousand years to reconstruct the logical foundation of your thinking, which, considering the very considerable threat to your galaxy, is a most crucial period. Therefore you should undertake this task immediately.¹⁰

The CGO pledges that as soon as man's first inquiry is received, we will hand over the initial course and detailed instruction for the gradual training of future generations in continuous [non-binary] logic. However, we will not do so before all the intelligent nations of Earth cease their absurd quarrels and agree to concentrate all of their efforts on the lengthy process of thought reconstruction. Otherwise, if a bellicose nation comes to grasp the principles of continuous logic it would be tantamount to giving it an absolute weapon, and ultimately lead to destruction of the entire human race.

The present Third Declaration of the CGO to mankind is the final one. The absence of a response in the next 50 (fifty) earth years will be construed as an indication that mankind is rejecting this offer to become a member of the Coalition.

By permission of The Coalition Group of Observers (CGO).

¹⁰ As a result of certain interventions, the threat of annihilation by the gravitational vortex is no longer a problem. However, mankind is in far more imminent danger of extinction through destruction of his ecosystem. *N.L.*

Chapter 1. The formation of planet Earth. The synthesis of non-living matter

What is matter? How was it formed? How many kinds of matter are there and how do they interact?

These and many other questions have confounded man's mind throughout his history. In order to find an answer to these questions, the human race turned its sight toward the vastness of space and to the microcosm. But the further man's understanding advanced, the more he found himself mired in questions and problems for which he had no answers.

In order to better understand nature, **man must drastically change the deepest foundations of his knowledge**. It is necessary to **KNOW and to UNDERSTAND the laws of formation of the universe and its development**. It is necessary to comprehend the laws of life of the planets, stars, and galaxies of our universe. They are much different from what contemporary science believes.

First, I would like to point out that everything considered by contemporary man as the universe is but a **small fragment of the Great Cosmos**, like a single grain of sand on the beach of a boundless ocean. And that grain of sand is **our home, the cradle of mankind**. In order to progress further, man has to comprehend the world into which he was born.

There are an infinite number of types of primary matter in the Great Cosmos. They interact more or less among themselves or do not interact at all. If two kinds of primary matter do not interact, then nothing changes in them: **they may even interpenetrate without influencing each other in any way and with nothing new appearing during the process**. It is as though they do not exist for one another.

Let us define the degree of influence of one form of primary matter on another as the "**coefficient of interaction**." We may then say that where there is no interaction between different kinds of primary matter **the coefficient of interaction equals zero**. It means that "bricks" of two different kinds of primary matter cannot fit together in the same structure, that they have no common characteristics and qualities. The coefficient of interaction is different even for two kinds of primary matter in separate points in space, because **space itself is not uniform in structure**.

Only when interaction takes place within a defined volume of space is it possible to talk about the mutual interactions of primary matters. In principle, there are volumes of space where there is **maximal** interaction between primary matters and others where **it is impossible**. Also there are certain regions of space where primary matters interact only partially by means of one or another shared quality. (**Fig. 6a**)

Where there is a **maximum interaction of two primary matters** (let us define them as **A** and **B**) **a total merging of these primary matters results in a new, hybrid form — AB**. Merging is possible only within the limits of a volume where all their parameters are the same. Different kinds of primary matter existing within the

same non-uniform space will be influenced differently by that space: it exerts a larger influence and change on one kind of primary matter, and a smaller influence and change on another. **Non-uniformity in space changes the qualitative structure of primary matters, thus creating conditions for their mergence and for the formation of new qualities.**

Thus, within the boundaries of a non-uniform space where conditions exist for the merging of the two kinds of primary matters, A and B, **a qualitatively new kind of matter forms — the hybrid AB (Fig. 6a).**

In turn **AB** has an influence on the non-uniformity of the space where it originated: the non-uniform space fills up with the primary matters and is transformed. Non-uniformity constitutes a distortion of space, leading to a change of dimension within the limits of that non-uniformity, as compared with neighboring regions of space.

Thus, a change in spatial dimensions within a certain quantitative range leads to conditions for **the merging of two kinds of primary matters**. In order for two primary matters to merge, a dimension must change as follows:

$$\Delta L = 0.020203236... \text{ (Fig. 6 and 6a).}$$

Similarly, for **the merging of three kinds of primary matter, the dimension of space, ΔL , must change once again**. Primary matter cannot merge using only a part of itself. **Only entire primary matters can merge**. Just as two and a half living men cannot exist, but only two or three whole men, neither can there be the merging of portions of primary matters.

Let us define a third kind of primary matter as **C**. As a result of the merging of three kinds of primary matter within the limits of a certain volume of space (for convenience let us consider it a sphere), **a qualitatively new hybrid, ABC**, forms, occupying a smaller volume than hybrid **AB (Fig. 7)**. Moreover, the spheres have precise boundaries, within which **the dimension of space is uniform**. The **conditions for the merging of one more kind of primary matter, D**, arises when the dimension of space inside a non-uniformity again changes by the factor $\Delta L = 0.020203236$. **A qualitatively new hybrid form, ABCD**, appears (**Fig. 8**). It will occupy a sphere of smaller volume than that of **ABC**.

With the next change, ΔL , in the dimension of space inside a non-uniformity, conditions appear for the merging of one more kind of primary matter, **E** with **ABCD**. **A qualitatively new form, ABCDE**, appears (**Fig. 9**).

Following a subsequent change, ΔL , in the dimension of space inside a non-uniformity, conditions appear for the merging of yet another form of primary matter, **F**, with **ABCDE**. **A qualitatively new form, ABCDEF**, emerges (**Fig. 10**).

After further changes in ΔL in the same non-uniformity of space, conditions arise for the merging of another form of matter, **G**, with **ABCDEF**. **A qualitatively new form, ABCDEFG**, is thereby produced (**Fig. 11**).

Thus, with each subsequent change in the dimension of non-uniform space, ΔL , **the seven kinds of primary matter forming our universe, consecutively merge**, creating at the same time six material spheres or bodies of qualitatively different composition and size.

The inside sphere, formed by all seven kinds of primary matter, is the PHYSICALLY SOLID PLANET, EARTH, a substance that has four aggregate forms — **solid, liquid, gas, and plasma**. Different aggregate forms appear as a result of the fluctuation of dimensions less than ΔL . Moving away from the physical center of non-uniformity, we have the following picture: a sphere formed by the merging of **six kinds of primary matter**, is called the “**ETHERIC**” or “**EPHEMERAL**” sphere; the merging of **five kinds of primary matter** produces the “**ASTRAL**” sphere; **four kinds of primary matter** constitutes the **FIRST “MENTAL”** sphere; **three kinds of primary matter**, the **SECOND MENTAL** sphere; and **two kinds of primary matter**, the **THIRD MENTAL** sphere ([Fig.12](#)).

The physical sphere of Earth shares the largest number of qualities with **the etheric sphere**, which is closest to it, and shares the smallest number of qualities with **the third mental sphere**, which is farthest from it. Mutual or shared qualities of the different spheres create certain conditions for their interaction. The amount of interaction between two spheres depends upon the number of qualities they share.

The amount of interaction between spheres can be defined as their “coefficient of interaction”: α_1 ; α_2 ; α_3 ; α_4 ; α_5 .

$$\alpha_1 > \alpha_2 > \alpha_3 > \alpha_4 > \alpha_5 \quad (\text{Fig.12a})$$

where:

α_1 — is the coefficient of interaction between the physically solid and etheric spheres.

α_2 — is the coefficient of interaction between the physically solid and astral spheres.

α_3 — is the coefficient of interaction between the physically solid and first mental spheres.

α_4 — is the coefficient of interaction between the physically solid and second mental spheres.

α_5 — is the coefficient of interaction between the physically solid and third mental spheres.

We then define **planet Earth**, as consisting of **six concentric spheres, each interposed within another, the whole constituting an UNBROKEN UNITY**. This fact is essential for understanding many phenomena and mysteries of both living and non-living matter, such as the evolution of life on our planet. Following the completion of the qualitative structure of Earth, non-uniformity in that region of space is neutralized ([Fig. 12b](#)).

Material spheres (not necessarily visible, physical mass), created by the merging of the primary matters, fill up the non-uniformity, equalizing the area of space. The non-uniformity of space can be compared to a depression or “well,” which appears on a flat, even surface of earth. The unevenness exists until the depression fills in with soil.

After the completion of the planet’s formation the same kinds of primary matter that created the planet continue their circulation, but without merging with each other, like a river, overflowing a reservoir after filling it to the top. The different primary matters that have merged to make up the planet vary in their activity within the planet; this is manifested by motion in the core of the earth, earthquakes and volcanic eruptions.

The formation of the earth was completed six billion years ago. This was the first cycle of evolution of the various kinds of primary matters and resulted in the evolution of non-living matter. The second step was the evolution **of living matter**. Before we move to that phase of evolution, it would be useful to keep in mind that our universe, including our planet, Earth, was created by the merging of seven kinds of primary matter.

The number “seven” has no mystical significance. The fact that our universe was formed from seven kinds of primary matter is **neither unique, miraculous nor divine**. It is just an expression of the qualitative structure of our universe.

It is not accidental that **white light splits into seven colors in the process of diffraction, that there are seven notes to an octave, and that the acquisition of seven spiritual bodies completes the human being’s earth cycle of evolution**. But, to repeat, there is nothing mystical or supernatural about all this.

Now, let us take a close look at **the evolution of living matter**.

Chapter 2. The emergence of life on Earth

Life! Living nature. **What is it?** What kind of magic could spark and fortify the spawning of life within a primeval ocean — from the chaos of a sterile, primordial planet spewing forth magma and fiery ashes?

Organic life — what is it? How could the miracle of life spring from the same types of molecules and atoms that make up the soil, water and atmosphere of our planet? What is the solution to the enigma that has perplexed so many generations of scientists: physicists, chemists, biologists and philosophers? Still, to the present day, these questions go unanswered.

Let us try to unravel this mystery of nature. First, let us look and see if the atoms that make up **everything** in nature are all identical. Or do they differ from each other in their atomic weight, or in the number of protons, neutrons and electrons that give rise to their diverse properties, composition and chemical reactions?

Do the atoms of hydrogen, oxygen, iron, gold and uranium, and the molecules of water, salts, acids and organic substances all have the same impact on the microcosm, the volume of their surrounding? If not, **how** do they differ?

On a macroscopic scale, every material body changes the dimensions and curvature of the space around it. This effect is especially pronounced around the large material bodies of outer space, i.e., the stars. Our scientists are already aware that during a solar eclipse there is a curvature in the rectilinear propagation of electromagnetic light waves from the sun.

This is an example of how **material bodies deform the space they happen to occupy**. Every massive material body of outer space — stars, planets, asteroids, etc. is composed of atoms and molecules that make up the stars and planets. The effect of just a single atom or molecule barely influences the microcosm and is virtually undetectable by modern devices .

How, then does an atom or molecule affect **its own** microcosm? Do the atomic nuclei of hydrogen, gold, and uranium all impact their surrounding space in the same way? Do **organic** and **inorganic** molecules have the same impact? To start with, let us consider the structure of the microcosm. Atomic dimensions range from 10^{-10} to 10^{-8} meters. Nuclear size falls within the range of several Fermi units around $(1\div 10)10^{-15}$ meters.

With regard to atomic volume, we are dealing with values of $10^{-30}\div 10^{-24}$ cubic meters, and a nuclear size of $10^{-48}\div 10^{-45}$ cubic meters. An atomic nucleus occupies up to one hundred trillionth of the entire atomic volume, while an electron occupies even less volume than the nucleus. Thus, the substance within the atom makes up only the slightest part of its volume, while the remaining portion is “empty”, i.e., 99.999% **unoccupied by any substance**.

The mass concentrated in the atomic nucleus has the same kind of impact on the microcosm as the concentrated matter of a star has on its surrounding

space. We will later consider the effect of a star on space and its consequences. For now, let us focus on how an atomic nucleus affects its own microcosm.

Every atomic nucleus affects the uniformity of space, thereby altering the dimension and curvature of its microcosm. What happens when this occurs? Do all the various atoms produce an identical change in the microcosmic dimensions?

Hydrogen has a minimal atomic weight of two atomic units; the transuranium elements (upwards of 235) represent the heaviest atomic weights. Obviously, the impact of hydrogen on its microcosm will be far **different** than that of the transuranium elements on their surrounding space.

Radioactive elements exert the strongest effect on the structure of the microcosm, but the impact is so powerful as to render their nuclei unstable and trigger their disintegration into simpler, stabler elements. Moreover, the higher their weight, the faster they disintegrate. Some of these elements exist for only a billionth of a second and only in an artificial environment.

What, then, is responsible for the curvature of microcosmic space? If a value of $\Delta L = \mathbf{0.02023236}$ is required to cause the fusion of the seven types of primary matter (described in Chapter 1), it follows that the atoms thus created give rise to spatial-dimension values of the mathematically opposite sign — that is, for example, a minus (–) instead of a plus (+). This leads to a **partial secondary curvature of the space**. In other words, **each atom thereby decreases the microcosmic space by a certain value of $\Delta L'$** .

The hydrogen atom induces the smallest change in its microcosmic space by a specific value of $\Delta L'$. The hydrogen atom produces the smallest change, $\Delta L'_{\min} = -\mathbf{0.0000859712}$ while the greatest change $\Delta L'_{\max} = -\mathbf{0.02020296}$, is induced by radioactive elements. With the latter, however, the change in microcosmic dimensions is quantitatively comparable, but opposite in sign to that which was necessary for the original creation of mass from the merging of the various primary matters.

$$|\Delta L'| \approx |\Delta L|$$

where:

$$\Delta L = \mathbf{0.02023236...}$$

and

$$\Delta L'_{\max} = -\mathbf{0.02020296...}$$

This is precisely why radioactive elements disintegrate into simpler ones: the process of disintegration proceeds more rapidly as $\Delta L'_{\max}$ approximates ΔL ([Fig. 13](#)).

Let us recall from Chapter 1 that the shared properties of the physical sphere created by the merger of the seven kinds of primary matter interact with the etheric sphere, composed of six. This interaction is expressed as the “coefficient of interaction,” α . As noted above, different atoms vary in the degree to which they effect changes in their microcosmic dimensions. The hydrogen atom has a minimum impact

on its surroundings, and accordingly, possesses the smallest coefficient of interaction, $\alpha_{1\min}$; the transuranium elements exert the maximum impact on their surroundings and therefore have the highest coefficient of interaction, $\alpha_{1\max}$.

Thus, each atom, by its own mass, (to a greater or lesser degree) **ruptures the qualitative barrier between the physical and etheric levels and opens a channel between them.**

The smallest channel is created by the hydrogen atom ($\alpha_{1\min}$) the largest by the transuranium elements ($\alpha_{1\max}$) (Fig. 14). Primary matter **G** separates from the other primary matters (the inverse process of the original fusion) and flows through the channel from the physical to the etheric level. Consequently, atoms gradually lose G-matter, become unstable and disintegrate into simpler, more stable elements. In other words, the concentration of **G**-matter relative to the other six kinds of primary matter diminishes with time. **Atomic disintegration** takes place when there is a critical loss of G-matter. The new atoms resulting from the disintegration have considerably less activity in the channels between their physical and etheric levels and consequently, have more stable structures.

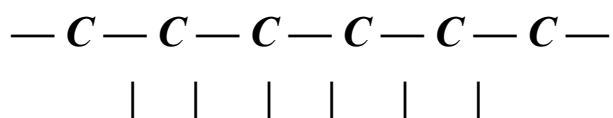
If one were to suppose, for example, that transuranium elements do not disintegrate, then a qualitatively new process would arise. **G**-matter would circulate between the physical and etheric levels but in excessive quantities. However, transuranium elements, lacking that surplus, lose type **G**-matter from their nuclei and disintegrate as a result. This is of significance in understanding the possibility of non-organic living forms, to be discussed in a later volume.

Up to now, we have been looking at the behavior of inanimate substances. Now we have reached the point of understanding and **solving the mystery of living matter and its origin.**

There are several elements in nature that possess four valence electrons, enabling them to create combinations of atoms in the configuration of long chains of identical atoms. In this configuration, each atom uses two out of four of its valence bonds to position its electrons. This enables other atoms and even radicals to attach to the vacant bonds. These atoms are — carbon, silicon, and phosphorus. The most dynamic of all is **carbon**, which becomes **the basis of all organic life**. Also, it happens to be one of the commonest elements on Earth.

In the primeval ocean, a high concentration of carbon atoms abounded, along with other elements, providing the building blocks for organic molecules. But special conditions were needed for joining the long chains together, namely, an active energy source to impact the stability of the carbon atoms and trigger a new combination of carbon atoms into forming chains. That source was provided by lightening electrical discharges in the atmosphere. This powerful energy discharge gave rise to conditions favoring the combination of carbon atoms into new and different sequences, as follows:





From such chains, molecules were derived, possessing a molecular weight of a hundred, a thousand or even ten thousand atomic units. In turn, these molecules were able to interconnect and form even larger molecules. While the atomic weights of inorganic molecules do not exceed three hundred to four hundred units, the organic molecules have virtually **no limit to their molecular weight**.

As a consequence, a carbon nucleus connected to such a molecule creates a channel between the physical and etheric levels greater than those produced by trans-uranium elements (α_{max}) and do not disintegrate like the latter (see [Fig. 14](#)).

Thus, conditions arise for a heavy flow of **G-matter** from the physical to the etheric level. With molecules of very high molecular weight, like those of **DNA** and **RNA**, α_{Imax} becomes compatible with conditions leading to the overflow of other types of matter as well. By contrast, though similar conditions for overflow prevail with the transuranium elements, the primary matters that form their nuclei also overflow, causing disintegration of these heavier elements and the formation of simpler, stabler elements.

In the case of organic molecules, **what is it, actually, that disintegrates and starts flowing through the channel between the physically solid and the etheric levels ?**

Organic molecules like **DNA** and **RNA** do not disintegrate by themselves, nor do the types of matter that formed them flow over to the etheric level. What is occurring here? Where and how does the new quality appear, that becomes the basis of organic life? (See [Fig. 15](#)).

Let us recall — the organic molecules, both simple and complex, arose in the primeval ocean as a result of the atmospheric electrical discharge. After they were formed, inorganic molecules still remaining in the water kept moving chaotically (Brownian movement).

All inorganic molecules and the simplest organic molecules have a coefficient of interaction, α_1 considerably smaller than that of the nucleic acids (α_{IDNA}) and (α_{IRNA}). In water, these chaotically moving molecules, atoms and ions migrate toward the zones of influence, $\Delta L'_{\text{DNA}}$ and $\Delta L'_{\text{RNA}}$, created by the **DNA** and **RNA** molecules, respectively. There they start disintegrating into their constituent primary matters. This occurs because in the zone of influence of the much larger **RNA** and **DNA** molecules, the smaller simpler molecules, atoms, and ions simply cannot exist.

Using channels created by **DNA** and **RNA** molecules, primary matters, released as by-products of the disintegration, flow onto the etheric level of Earth. The etheric sphere, you will recall from Chapter 1, was created by the fusion of six primary matters (ABCDEF) out of the seven kinds of matter available and lacks only **G-matter**. Therefore, the **DNA** and **RNA** structures (which are projections of their microcosmic

curvature on the etheric level) start filling up specifically with the only type of matter lacking on the etheric level, i.e., type G.

The flow continues until the concentration of G-matter on the etheric level approximates the concentration of G-matter on the physically solid Earth level. As a result of this process, **the etheric bodies of DNA and RNA** are then formed and the qualitative barrier between the physical and etheric levels completely disappears. A total identity of the physical and etheric levels of Earth is then achieved within the **DNA and RNA** molecules.

An example of a similar process can be found in the law of communicating vessels (**Fig. 16**). Organic molecules, especially **DNA and RNA**, create a channel between the physical and etheric levels sufficient to permit the free flow of primary matters from the physical to the etheric level (see Fig.16, right).

But organic molecules, even with their new qualities (i.e., an etheric structure and the circulation of primary matters), are not yet alive; they merely possess **the conditions necessary for the origin of life**. We may speak of life only when a combination of several organic molecules acquires another new quality — the ability to replicate.

The first living structure is the virus, the most primitive life form, a transitional form between the living and non-living. In a water environment, the virus behaves like a living compound; when dehydrated it appears lifeless and is, in effect, a crystal, a condition in which it can survive indefinitely. When it is returned to a watery environment, the virus changes from a crystal to a primitive life form (**Fig. 17**). Understanding viral behavior as alive under one set of conditions and as lifeless under another, provides the comprehension and solution to life's great enigma which orthodox science has hitherto been powerless to solve.

What is the nature of this phenomenon?

It is essentially as follows: **the viral structure in a water environment creates a minimal channel between the physical and etheric levels, which mediates the disintegration of simple organic and inorganic molecules. This creates conditions for the primary matters — the disintegration by-products — to flow over from the physical to the etheric level — a chain of events which leads to the formation of an EXACT REPLICA of the virus on the etheric level.**

When heated, the weak bonding between the atoms of a viral RNA molecule and its OH⁻ and H⁺ groups breaks. This results in water loss (dehydration), a decrease in atomic weight, which reduces the curvature of the viral microspace, and a decrease in the diameter of the channel between the physical and etheric levels. With the drop in the viral microspace curvature, even the simplest organic and inorganic molecules no longer disintegrate. The dehydrated viral RNA then behaves just like any other organic or inorganic molecule (**Fig. 17, left**).

When, however, the virus returns to a water environment, its RNA molecule reattaches the OH⁻ and H⁺ groups. The cumulative atomic weight becomes critical, the degree of microspace curvature surrounding the molecule increases

— causing the disintegration of the simpler organic and inorganic molecules and the release of their primary matters, which then flow over to the etheric level (Fig. 17, right). On the etheric level, an exact replica of the virus is created out of type G-matter. This is the first qualitative distinction that permits us to consider the virus the earliest primitive living organism.

The second qualitative distinction is the ability of the virus to replicate its structure — to create a double of itself on the physical level — a function that is linked to the quality of the spatial structure surrounding it.

The RNA molecule is composed of two chain-like spirals: the atoms within the chains are very strongly bonded together, while the atoms attaching the two chains to each other are very weakly joined.

The viral RNA molecule is a prerequisite for the development of the new quality — replication — that characterizes life.

Viruses first arose in the ocean. The fluid movement caused their displacement from one location to another, exposing them to various external conditions, including different levels and types of radiation.

This changed the atomic structure of the viral RNA so as to cause the bonding between the spirals to weaken. Even minor changes in the external environment were sufficient to rupture the molecular bonds and divide a viral RNA into two chains, quite separate from each other. Then, out of the plethora of molecules surrounding it, each link of the chain could attach to its vacant electron bond only those molecules that were mirror images of itself. The latter molecules, known as **nucleotides**, i.e., adenine, thymine, cytosine, and uracil, then united to reproduce an exact copy of the second missing chain, so that instead of one viral RNA molecule, two identical RNA molecules appeared. A necessary precondition for this to occur was the availability of just the right kind and amount of nucleotides and water.

At this point, we must emphasize one very important peculiarity that sets viruses apart from other, more sophisticated organisms. **At the moment the molecule splits into two spirals, its microcosmic curvature decreases and the channel between the physical and etheric levels closes again. Only after each of the spirals is finished building its mirror image does its atomic weight return to critical, causing the channel between the physical and etheric levels to reopen.**

We will consider this mechanism in greater detail later when describing the process of cell division. Meanwhile, let us return to our description of the stages of the origin of life. A virus, as we stated before, is **the simplest organism**, an RNA molecule encased in a protein membrane. This membrane insulates the RNA molecule from its outer environment, buffering the impact of external factors and creating a state of maximum stability. It also slows down the motion of organic and inorganic molecules through it, thus creating a “microclimate” of its own around the RNA molecule. The viral protein capsule is, in effect, a prototype of the cell membrane. In the course of further evolution, various changes occurred — mutations in the RNA structure — due to the impact of various forms of radiation, temperature, pressure, and ac-

tive chemical substances. This changed the properties of the viral structure and the extent of its influence on its microspace.

Few of the many mutations were positive — perhaps one in one thousand. But over time, the cumulative effect of the positive changes gave rise to new properties. The membrane around the RNA molecule also changed. The appearance of a multi-layered membrane created a more stable environment around the **RNA** molecule. As a result, changes in external conditions exerted a weaker influence on the composition and condition of the membrane's inner environment. The appearance of the fat layer, serving as an armored protection of the protein layers around the **RNA**, and later, the **DNA** molecule, reduced the influence of the outer environment to a minimum. Now only abrupt changes in the environment, destroying the membrane, could affect the inner environment of the organism.

Furthermore, the fat layers of the membrane, being endowed with hydrophobic, i.e., water-repellant properties, reduced the circulation of cellular substance to a minimum, further enhancing the stability and relative independence of the inner from the outer environment. From this moment in the process of the evolution of life we may speak of the emergence of the “**protocell**.”

Further evolution as a consequence of random and accidental mutations resulted in the appearance of the first **monocellular organisms**. Some of these simple monocellular organisms were silicon-based. Structurally inflexible and very sensitive, silicon-based organisms were unable to adapt to the rapidly changing conditions of the environment. They gradually disappeared and were replaced by carbon-based organisms.

All systems strive to obtain maximum stability and equilibrium. Under the impact of the external environment, the earliest monocellular organisms were partially destroyed, losing intracellular organic substances and suffering damage to the cellular membrane itself. Only systems that could independently regain stability and restore structural integrity were able to survive and continue evolving. This required the replenishment of their losses.

Since the primeval ocean had very low concentrations of organic substances, it was very difficult for monocellular organisms to extract what they needed to restore their integrity. Let us recall the mechanisms involved in the formation of organic substances from inorganic molecules of carbon, oxygen, nitrogen, hydrogen, etc. This reaction takes place when water, saturated by inorganic molecules and atoms, is struck by electrical discharges generated by the differential of static electrical charge between the Earth's atmosphere and surface.

Electrical discharges curve the microspace around these substances, creating the conditions for the bonding of carbon atoms in chains and the emergence of organic molecules.

Synthesis of the simplest organic compounds must occur inside the monocellular organisms themselves to enable them to restore and preserve their structure. The synthesis of organic out of inorganic molecules is possible after a

change in microcosmic dimensions of a value of $\Delta L \approx 0.020203236$. Neither simple nor complex living organisms are able to create an electrical discharge comparable in magnitude to that obtained from the atmosphere. In the course of evolution, however, the simplest monocellular organisms evolved an intermediate version, which provided the required value of ΔL .

Remember that each molecule, each atom, changes its microcosm by a certain value. The maximal change is caused by organic molecules. Very large organic molecules like those of DNA and RNA make such a strong impact on their microcosm that simple organic molecules in their vicinity disintegrate rather than synthesize into larger structures. A change in microcosmic dimensions by a value of $0 < \Delta L \leq 0.020203236$ is necessary for the synthesis of organic from inorganic molecules. Such an impact on the microcosm is effected by intermediate-sized organic molecules.

Since the required molecules in monocellular organisms need to be only one tenth the size of **RNA** and **DNA** molecules, the problem should be readily solved. However, the situation is not that simple. Every molecule changes its microcosm and this change is **permanent** as long as the molecule itself remains intact. But, for the synthesis of organic molecules, the microcosmic dimensions must **fluctuate with an amplitude** of:

$0 < \Delta L < 0.010101618$, and be periodic.

For this to occur, molecules within monocellular organisms must be **able to respond to even minimal external environmental stimuli** by fluctuations in their microcosmic dimensions of $0 < \Delta L < 0.010101618$. At the same time environmental radiations must be able to penetrate their membranes unimpeded without destroying the monocellular organisms.

The external factors meeting all these demands are the low thermal and optical radiations of the sun. Other segments of solar radiation, such as x- and gamma radiation are destructive to organic compounds and organisms. What situation, then, can provide organic substances and organisms with the softer, lower frequency radiations from the sun, while simultaneously filtering out the harsher, higher frequency solar radiations?

Again, the solution is provided by water. Sea water absorbs x-rays and gamma radiation and **allows the passage** of the sun's thermal and optical radiations, which readily penetrate the membranes of monocellular organisms.

Therefore, the following conditions are both necessary and sufficient for the cellular synthesis of organic substances:

a) the presence of organic molecules within monocellular organisms, which can readily change their structure in response to changes in external factors, leading to fluctuations in microcosmic dimensions within a range of:

$0 < \Delta L < 0.010101618...$

b) the presence of external factors, such as low frequency thermal and optical radiations from the sun, that will cause the required changes in molecular structure without destroying the molecules of monocellular organisms.

In the course of evolution the exact molecule that meets the requirements was developed — **chlorophyll**.

While absorbing certain frequencies of the optical (photonic) and thermal radiation of the sun, chlorophyll molecules change their structure, creating new, but very unstable compounds. These compounds disintegrate as soon as the effect of the thermal and optical radiations ceases: this is precisely what causes the fluctuation in microcosmic dimensions so necessary for the initiation of the synthetic process within monocellular organisms.

Absorption of the photons of solar radiation by chlorophyll molecules causes fluctuations in the microcosmic dimensions of the latter. The process is as follows: as the chlorophyll absorbs photons, the electrons jump to other orbits. When this occurs, the chlorophyll molecule attaches **OH– — H+** groups to the new electron bonds. This causes fluctuations in the molecular weight of the chlorophyll molecule with consequent fluctuation in the dimensions of its microspace. This chain of events creates the proper conditions for initiating the synthesis of organic compounds. During the process of synthesis the chlorophyll molecule loses its accumulated potential and returns to its former stable condition, ready to initiate a new cycle of photon absorption. This process, **photosynthesis**, is marked by the absorption of carbon dioxide (**CO₂**), and the release of oxygen (**O₂**) as a by-product.

Thus, in the course of evolution, thanks to the chlorophyll molecules and through the absorption of sunlight, the simplest monocellular organisms **acquired the capacity to synthesize the organic compounds** necessary for the restoration of their structure and life.

Additionally, by the synthesis and accumulation of organic substances inside their structure, the simplest monocellular organisms provided the requisite amount of organic molecules for the process of **duplication** — i.e., **cell division**.

First, let us recall what happens in a simple, monocellular organism, like (non-viral) **DNA**. When a monocellular organism accumulates the critical mass of organic molecules, this changes the microcosmic dimension within the cell, triggering cellular instability. Primary matters begin to flow from the physical to the etheric level, initiating cell division.

As in the virus, the spirals of the simple DNA molecule also diverge in the division process, each to recreate its own mirror image. However, unlike the virus, after splitting off from each other, each spiral creates its own channel between the physical and etheric levels. And both channels remain open during the buildup of mirror images. With the completion of the full structure, a supercritical microcosmic curvature appears, triggering the disintegration of the structure. This causes the primary matters which comprise the mass of the structure to overflow onto the etheric level. As disintegration of mass proceeds, and the amount of mass decreases, the channels originally

created by it narrow, and the flow of primary matters between the levels gradually returns to normal.

However, during the time of the greatest flow of primary matters between the levels, the concentration of G-matter becomes several times higher than normal on the etheric level. This is followed by a **reversal of flow of G-matter back from the etheric to the physical level** through the channel. In this process of reversal of flow the etheric structure of the DNA molecule recreates itself on the physical level, thus restoring its complete physical structure. The system now attains a state of equilibrium: two physically stable DNA molecules with balanced channels between the physical and etheric levels. The understanding of this process is crucial for fathoming **the mystery of the origin of life on Earth**.

What exactly is the process of cell division, and how does it occur? Let us explore and try to understand this mechanism, which is essential for the continuation of all life. Let us consider the process of division in the case of a complex cell. First, **either through photosynthesis or by assimilation of substances from the external environment, organic substances concentrate within the cell; this concentration becomes critical, the cell loses its stability, and the division process begins**.

The cell's centrioles diverge to opposite poles of the cell and became the foci around which the division process begins (Fig.18). Protein filaments draw the chromosomes out of the original cell nucleus toward the centrioles, and this initiates the formation of two new nuclei (Fig. 19). Initially the new nuclei each contain half the set of required chromosomes. Each nucleus will create a channel to the etheric level. Together these channels are virtually equal in size to the channel created by one whole nucleus. The dimension of the cell's microcosm remains essentially unchanged and the balance of the flow between the physical and etheric levels remains the same. (Fig. 19: the levels of fluid in the communicating vessels are similar.). Each chromosome of each nucleus recreates its mirror-image out of the organic substances accumulated in the cell. This is a manifestation of the natural tendency of any system to achieve a state of maximum stability.

Upon completion of the process, two nuclei are created inside one cell, each with a channel through which primary matters flow to the etheric level. The presence of two nuclei within the cell creates a curvature of its microcosm that renders the cell unstable. Its constituent organic substances start disintegrating and the released primary matters flow over to the etheric level (Fig. 20). As the process continues, the amount of primary matter flowing from the physical to the etheric level is much greater than the amount flowing to the physical from the etheric level (Fig. 20: note the levels of the communicating vessels.)

Accompanying the process of the cell's physical disintegration, **two etheric bodies of the cell** are created on the etheric level since **each single nucleus also creates an identical microcosmic curvature on the etheric level**. (Fig. 21). When this occurs the amount of primary matter, especially G-matter, which flows to the etheric level, becomes excessive on that level (Fig. 21). Upon complete disintegration of the former physical cell, its constituent organic molecules, **the building blocks** for new

cell creation, remain. When the flooding of primary matters from the physical level over to the etheric level ceases, the excess amount of **G-matter** from the two new emerging etheric cells starts flowing via the same channels from the etheric to the physical body and creates a projection of the etheric cell on the physical level (**Fig. 21a**). This creates an additional microcosmic curvature on a projection area at the physical level, resulting in the synthesis of the required molecules out of the biomass of the former cell (**Fig. 22**). The synthesis of the necessary molecules and their placement will be in the order designated by the template given by the cell's etheric bodies. An analogous and very similar process is **the magnetization and distribution of iron filings along the lines of force of a magnetic field**. Upon completion of the synthesis, two completely new cells are formed with the image and likeness of the former cell, and a balanced flow of primary matters between the physical and etheric levels is achieved (**Fig. 23**).

Now let us return to what happens to monocellular plants. As a result of cell division and the photosynthetic process two new cells accumulate organic substance. When this substance achieves critical mass the cells begin to divide. Four identical cells then appear, which, upon amassing organic substance, begin dividing on their own. Now eight identical cells are created, then sixteen, thirty-two, sixty-four, and so on. As a result, the growth rate of monocellular organisms unfolds in geometrical progression.

For purposes of definition we will call organisms which synthesize organic substances through photosynthesis **“vegetable organisms.”** **The growth rate of the amount of the simplest of these — phytoplankton — is defined by a biological efficiency factor (BEF).** This refers to that **portion of sunlight per square unit of the organism's surface, which is absorbed and utilized for the synthesis of organic substances.**

For phytoplankton the BEF is 2-3 %. The absorption of sunlight is a necessary condition for photosynthesis. However, sunlight does not penetrate more than 300 feet below the surface of the primeval ocean. Therefore, phytoplankton only actively grows close to the ocean's surface, gradually producing a solid carpet of growth. (A given area of ocean surface exposed to sunlight can support only a limited amount of phytoplankton). The motion of water at the surface transports some of the phytoplankton to the lower depths, where the sunlight either does not penetrate or is insufficient to support the life of monocellular plants. They cannot move on their own and depend completely on the circulation of the water. Most of the phytoplankton die because of the above conditions, creating a large mass of organic substance during the disintegration process. Yet, some of the organisms that were able to adapt to the new conditions accumulated organic substances from the environment rather than synthesizing them from the surrounding sea water. When, however, they were able to return to the sunlit surface of the ocean, these organisms again began to synthesize organic substances. Such organisms have survived to the present day.

The best-known representative of monocellular organisms with dual means of obtaining organic substance is the **Green Euglena** (**Fig. 24**). But some of the latter be-

came increasingly unable to find their way to the ocean's surface. They lost their ability to synthesize organic substances and, once again, became **predators** of vegetable organic mass. Herein lies **the origin of the two main types of living organisms — animal and vegetable**.

All monocellular organisms are vulnerable to the vicissitudes of the environment and must adapt to survive. One of the means of adaptation was the evolution of an extension of the cell membrane, the flagellum that enabled the organism to move through its environment. At a certain moment in evolution several monocellular plants became entangled while their unengaged flagella kept moving freely, causing the entire bundle to navigate as a single unit. A typical representative of such an organism is **volvocales Volvox** (Fig. 25). In the course of further evolution such aggregates with their membranes so conjoined were far more resistant to environmental impact than an individual cell, and they became the next stage in the evolution of life.

The cells most deeply embedded in the interior of the aggregate were surrounded on every side by other, more superficial cells, thus rendering the deeper cells practically impervious to the influence of the environment, in contrast to the surface cells which remained very much exposed. As a result, in the course of evolution, various cells in the aggregate began to specialize in different functions. The obvious consequence of this differentiation was the development of further dissimilarities in cellular appearance and structure.

These functional distinctions gradually became increasingly apparent. **The differentiation of form and function among the various cells of one complete cellular aggregate** was then established, which, in turn, was subordinated to the requirements of the organism as a whole — **the multicellular organism**. The further developmental stages of these organisms may be found in any standard text on evolutionary biology.

Let us now focus our attention on the qualitative differences between the various types of cells that comprise a single multicellular organism. What are the qualitative features determining differences in cellular function and structure? They are as follows:

First, the curvature of the microcosm inside the cell changes, causing the disintegration of complex intracellular organic molecules. The spatial curvature reaches the astral level and the released primary matters begin to flow through the channel to that level. On the astral level, **cells of the astral body** begin to form an exact duplicate of the cell's etheric body (Fig. 26) from the same G-matter as the cell's etheric body. This creates **the lower astral body of the cell**. Further changes in cellular function and structure in the lower astral body of the cell results in the curving of its microspace by the value, $\Delta L'$. When this value approximates

$$\Delta L'_2 \approx -2 \times 0.020203236...$$

it initiates a secondary curvature of space which obliterates the second qualitative barrier, the barrier between the astral and physical levels of the planet. When the channel breaks through the barrier, **G** and **F** matters flow from the physical to the as-

tral level. Thus **the complete astral body of the cell** is formed out of two kinds of primary matter (**Fig. 27**).

During this process the velocity and amount of the circulating primary matters between these levels keeps changing, giving rise to new qualities, properties, and potentials on the different qualitative levels of the cell.

The next change in the cell's physical structure occurs when the entire cellular system — physical, etheric and astral — alters the microcosmic dimensions by a value of $\Delta L'_3$, thereby creating a secondary transformation of microcosmic space to accommodate three kinds of primary matters.

$$\Delta L'_3 \approx -3 \times 0.020203236...$$

When this occurs, the third qualitative barrier, the barrier between the planetary physical and first mental levels disappears. Primary matters flow to the first mental level via the cellular channel and **the cell's first mental body** is formed in consecutive order out of the three kinds of primary matters G, F, and E (**Fig. 28**).

The synthesis of the astral and first mental bodies is related to cellular structural changes causing changes in dimension of the cellular microcosm. Consequently, cell differentiation in multicellular organisms involves not only structural and functional differences on a physical level, but also the synthesis of astral and, depending upon the cell, first mental bodies, by various types of cells.

It should be noted that the smallest amount of spatial curvature is caused by a cell on the etheric level, and the greatest amount, on the first mental level:

$$\Delta L'_1 < \Delta L'_2 < \Delta L'_3$$

This creates a difference in the velocity of primary matters circulating between the levels. This fact alone creates qualitative distinctions among cells with different spiritual bodies, as manifested by differences in their properties and functions.

Complex organized multicellular organisms have several types of cells:

- a) **bone and cartilaginous tissue cells**, which have **only etheric bodies**.
- b) **connective and adipose tissue cells**, having **etheric and lower astral bodies** (from one kind of primary matter, G-matter).
- c) **muscle tissue cells of different kinds**, having **etheric and complete astral bodies** (from two kinds of primary matters, G and F).
- d) **blood cells**, having **etheric, full astral, and first mental bodies** (from one kind of primary matter, G).
- e) **nerve tissue cells of the sympathetic and parasympathetic system**, having **etheric, full astral bodies** (from two kinds of primary matters, G and F) and **first mental bodies** (from two kinds of primary matter, G and F).
- f) **nerve tissue cells of the brain and spinal cord** having **etheric, astral, and first mental bodies** (from three kinds of primary matters, G, F, and E).

Special types of cells, **sexual cells**, possess **one half the set of chromosomes in the nucleus and, in addition to their physical bodies, possess only etheric bodies**.

Differences in the speed of circulation of primary matters through the cell's various spiritual levels lead to differences in the speed of the evolutionary development of the cell's various spiritual bodies. Understanding this is essential for understanding cellular aging.

A healthy young cell is in balance on all of its levels. That is, the speed of evolutionary development in the cell's physical, etheric, astral, and mental bodies are all identical to each other (Fig. 28). The primary matters freely circulate between the cell's bodies and the cell is able to function at maximum activity.

A physical cell is constantly exposed to the impact of the external environment. Some of the toxins produced in the process of its metabolism are not released and their accumulation eventuates in the physical cell's becoming increasingly inert and its structure partially destroyed. As this occurs the curvature of the cell's microcosmic dimensions decreases and gradually the secondary transformation between the cell's physical and first mental bodies starts to disappear.

A decrease of the curvature of a cell's microcosmic dimension by the value of $\Delta L''_3$ leads to a narrowing of the

$$\Delta L''_3 = 0.020203236...$$

channel between the cell's physical and first mental bodies and a selective discontinuation of the flow of primary matters to the latter (Fig. 29). The further impact of the external environment, coupled with the effects of the toxic products of cellular metabolism, results in a gradual reduction of the cell's microcosmic curvature. When this value becomes:

$$\Delta L''_2 = + 2 \times 0.020203236...$$

the flow of primary matters (except for G-matter) to the cell's astral level stops and it loses its properties and qualities. Concomitantly the physical cell becomes dehydrated (Fig. 30).

With the complete cessation of the circulation of all cellular substance on the physical level, there is also a termination of the circulation of primary matters between the cell's physical and etheric levels. This is the point of **physical death of the cell** (Fig. 31). As the physical cell decomposes, the complex molecules which make up the cell nucleus dissociate into simpler molecules. This leads to a further decrease in the cell's microcosmic dimensions. When that value equals

$$\Delta L''_1 = + 3 \times 0.020203236...$$

the original spatial dimension corresponding to the physically solid sphere is restored (Figs. 32, 33, 34 show the different stages of the cell's physical disintegration).

Following the disintegration of the physical cell, the etheric, astral, and first mental bodies of the cell retain their integrity for a while and remain intact by virtue of their shared qualities and the interaction and circulation of G-matter common to

them. The activity of all these processes is a thousand times less effective than when the spiritual bodies were interacting with the physical body. If negative external factors affecting these levels are absent, **the system containing the etheric, astral, and first mental bodies of the cell can continue to exist for a considerable length of time.**

Let us bear in mind that we have been considering the cell of a **multicellular organism with a complicated structure** and, consequently, all the above should be looked at from the standpoint of the organism as a whole, which we will now do.

All processes in multicellular organisms occur synchronously and interdependently. There exists a unified system of cooperation among all the cells of the entire multicellular organism on all levels, physical, etheric, astral and first mental. It is impossible to consider cellular functioning independent from that of the entire organism. If, for some reason, a cell or cell group drops out of the communication system, the entire organism is disrupted. The resultant dysfunctions (diseases) lead to the disintegration and death of the organism. We will examine these processes later.

A healthy multicellular organism is a unified system that operates harmoniously not only on the physical level: the etheric bodies of its cells are also a unified, balanced system, which we will call **the organismic etheric body**.

Likewise, the astral bodies of the cells create their own system on the astral level — **the organismic astral body**. Similarly, the first mental bodies generate an analogous system on the first mental level — **the first mental body of the organism**.

And, in their turn, the physical, etheric, astral and the first mental bodies of an organism constitute a unitary system, which is in effect a living organism — living matter, LIFE. When the unitary nature of this system is fragmented, so is that of the life process, to be restored only when the wholeness of the system is reinstated.

Nerve cells and the brain hold a special place in the system of life. Because of their level of development, nerve cells of the brain have a dominant position in multicellular organismic functioning; they affect, control, and orchestrate the functions of all the other types of cells in the organism. They provide well-balanced functioning of all the cells in an organism's physical body — a necessary condition for the life of the organism and the unity of the physical, etheric, astral, and first mental bodies.

It should be noted that neurons have mental bodies only in some complex multicellular organisms; however, the neurons are developmentally dominant over all the other types of cells in an organism. Each neuron, in particular, and the brain as a whole, in all multicellular organisms, generates an energy field (a **“psi-field”**) that controls all the functions of an organism.

Additionally, the brain, through the psi-field, monitors other functions, without which the life of the organism would be highly problematic. One of these is to keep the functions of the etheric, astral and first mental bodies of an organism in safety and balance. Just as a cell has a protective membrane to shield it from environmental impact, so does each living organism elaborate a **protective shield** — a kind of psi-field

precipitate, generated by its brain and cerebral neurons. This shield protects the organism's physical and spiritual bodies from the negative impact of the external environment and other living organisms.

The other functions of the neurons and the brain are the processing and analysis of information and the reacting to events taking place in the external environment of the organism. This is possible because processes on the upper astral and the first mental levels run several multiples of ten times faster than those on the physical level. On the higher levels of evolution of highly structured organisms, **intelligence** emerges.

In the next chapter we will, in greater detail describe the psi-field. What is its role in the evolution of life, in the evolution of a species? How does nature attain harmony in balancing the population of a species of living organism with the constraints of its ecological system? What is **an ecological system, and what kinds of inner self regulatory mechanisms does it contain?**

Chapter 3. Psi-fields in nature and in the evolution of intelligence

Most living forms from the simplest to the most advanced have a nervous system, the basis of which is the nerve cell or neuron¹¹. Nervous systems are distinguished by the number of neurons they possess, the extent of their interneuronal interaction, and the complexity of the organismic structure governed by the neurons. **The more complex the organism's nervous system the more complicated its behavioral system** as manifested by its conditioned and unconditioned reflexes. At a certain level of development of the nervous system a new quality arises in living organisms — **realization of their existence and a dawning understanding of the laws of life. The rudiments of intelligence appear. A new quality of life emerges — rational activity. HOMO SAPIENS is an example.**

The qualities and properties of the nervous system are determined by **the number of neurons present, the structure of the nervous system and the quality of its evolutionary development**. In living organisms complex behavioral reactions require **large numbers of mutually interactive neurons while simple behavioral reactions require only a small number of neurons**. It is logical to assume that in order to attain a certain degree of complexity in its interaction with its environment, a given organism needs to have a requisite minimal number of mutually interactive neurons. Similarly, **a minimal number of mutually interactive neurons are necessary for intellectual activity or for certain types of reasoning**. Let us consider the possibilities arising during the evolution of life for creating a system with **the critical number of neurons essential for the emergence of intelligence**.

a) Such a system could develop if the nervous systems of many different organisms join into one single system. The simpler the nervous system of a single member of the species, the greater the number of members that must be united in a single system in order to manifest intelligence.

b) In certain species, the presence of a critical number of neurons in individuals of that species permits the emergence and evolution of intelligence.

For example, biologists conducted a series of experiments on termites. The termites were released into a defined area, and it was observed that their population gradually increased.

Before their population reached a critical number, their behavior was chaotic and senseless. After the population exceeded a certain critical number, the behavior of the termites changed dramatically: their actions now became harmonious and intelligent. Some of the termites began building a mound, and interestingly, they did so simultaneously, from all sides. The construction process was so precise that all the

¹¹Even single-celled organisms, such as the amoeba, have sensory and motor functions, though they lack a centralized nervous system.

inner tunnels of the mound dovetailed into one another with the amazing accuracy of a fraction of a millimeter. Other termites delivered the materials necessary for construction. Another group supplied the colony with food. Soldiers also appeared, etc. A well organized and adjusted life became evident.

Similar colonies have also been observed in ants and bees. It is interesting that these insects do not live outside their colonies. In their dwellings they maintain a certain optimal microclimate and microflora. The colony regulates its size and assigns the number of individuals required to perform certain tasks, according to its needs. For instance, if a beehive has too many drones, the excess number is destroyed. The sentinel bees admit only members of the hive, etc.

What is the essence of this natural phenomenon? Let us try to find an explanation. The nervous system of an individual insect existing outside of the colony is incapable of performing the complex behavioral reactions regularly observed in the colony. If such functions were genetically programmed, they would be manifest outside the colony as well — to say nothing of the awkward question: **who endowed their genes with such capacities in the first place?**

For complex behavioral reactions to occur in these colonies, a huge number of neurons interacting within a unified system is required. How can this be explained? Nature has found a most original way of solving this problem. The nervous system of each member of a species — termite, ant, bee, etc. — generates a “**psi-system**” which creates a protective shell around the member — since an individual member’s reaction are quite primitive and limited (**Figs. 35 and 36**). **When there is a higher than optimum density of termites living in an area, the psi-field generated by each termite begins to destroy the individual protective shields of the other termites (Fig. 37).**

When the density of individual termites reaches a value critical for the species, **the individual protective shells completely disintegrate resulting in the creation of a single protective shield common to the entire colony (Fig. 38).** Now each individual has an open psi-field and becomes **a part of the shared, unified nervous system of the entire colony.** For each species there is an optimum number of individuals included in each “family” or colony. There is also a minimum number of individuals necessary for the emergence of **a common psi-system** that can form the foundation for the entire train of complicated behavioral reactions that identifies a fully functioning colony. Likewise there is an upper limit of the number of individuals that can make up a functioning colony. The greater the number of individuals truly functioning within the colony, the more complex and sophisticated are the behavioral reactions seen in the colony. What parameters determine the upper limit of the number of individuals sharing a joint psi-field?

a) **the extent of the joint psi-field** which determines the size of physical territory needed for survival, and controlled by the colony; its living space.

b) **the density of the colony’s unified psi-field** that is in effect a result of the mixture of all individual constituent psi-fields. This indivisible joint psi-field has **a critical density.** Increasing the density beyond the critical point results in adverse ef-

fects on the colony with suppression of functioning and, ultimately, destruction of individual members within the colony.

c) **incomplete attunement of the individual psi-systems with one another**, which in the case of excessive numbers, may lead to a lack of coordination within the entire colony and make it **non-viable**.

The optimum quantity of individuals in the colony is regulated by the colony itself. Thus, **the psi-system (nervous system) of an individual termite, ant, or bee, is only a single unit in the far larger psi-field of the entire colony**. Similarly, with multicellular organisms it would be correct to consider the entire colony as a **super-organism**, since only this type of a colony is viable and able to adapt to changes in the environment. Individual members of a colony **cannot** act on their own, just as individual cells of a multicellular organism cannot exist alone. The shared psi-systems of a colony can solve fairly complicated tasks that arise in the struggle for survival. This has allowed species possessing such psi-fields to survive and preserve themselves over the course of almost three billion years.

While the superorganismic state is advantageous to individuals of the species that comprise the state, such a system blocks the individual of the species from attaining the level of development necessary for individuation (the separating out of oneself from the surrounding environment). This occurs because of the following reasons:

1. Each individual moves freely within the territory occupied by the colony, so, accordingly, **the interactive force between the psi-field of the individual and that of the shared psi-field of the colony changes constantly**.

2. In contributing to the shared psi-field of the colony each individual utilizes only a neurophysiological “reserve”, which is activated when the organism is threatened. Normalization and regulation of individual organismic functions are maintained by other neurons of the central nervous system. **One result of this split in function is a decrease in the life span of the individual**.

3. The interaction between the psi-field of the individual of the species and the shared psi-field of the colony takes place in a volume of space. This does not permit optimum interaction between the individual and the colony because of the constantly changing external and internal conditions of the space dominated by the shared psi-field.

4. The movement of an individual of the species is **random**, making it **impossible for each individual’s psi-field to specialize its functioning in the interest of the evolutionary development of the entire colony**.

5. The species is unable to select and preserve significant experience in its entirety from generation to generation because of the short life-span of each individual.

6. The absence of neuronal structures, which would allow the transformation of primary matters and the synthesis of psi-fields with the necessary properties.

7. The inability of an individual's neurons to evolve to a level which provides the qualities essential for the origin of intelligence.

Due to the above reasons the evolutionary progress of these colonies has not taken place and intelligent civilizations of ants, bees, and termites have not originated on our planet. On other planets, however, where other, more favorable conditions exist, it is quite possible.

The nature of termite, ant, or bee colonies is in perfect accordance with the Hegelian theory of the "absolute idea," but there are no other species with permanently active joint psi-fields on planet Earth.

There are, however, species that temporarily function as **superorganisms**. **What is the basis for their existence and what is their evolutionary development?** In most species of living organisms psi-fields are "closed" to a greater or lesser degree. In the evolution of the species, the protective shield of the psi-field of each member served to **buffer it from the influence of psi-fields of other members of the same or different species**. Otherwise, **weakening of the shields could have disrupted the colony's balance, reducing its biological activity and bringing it to extinction**. **This actually happened to many species in the course of their evolution**. The evolutionary progress of a species is manifested by the flexibility of its reaction and its adaptability to environmental change.

This capacity became rooted and encoded in the genes and passed on to succeeding generations as a starting point for the further evolution of the species. Evolutionary change led to **harmonious changes in the inner world of its constituent members**. Also transformed were the structure and functions of its cells, including the neurons, creating (in the case of positive mutations) conditions conducive to evolutionary development. Every species that survived developed **defense mechanisms, protective psi-field shields**, which created the most favorable conditions for the evolutionary development of each individual of the species.

What, then, triggers the individuals of a species to dissolve their protective shield, share their psi-fields and temporarily become a **superorganism**?

1) When there is a threat of extermination of the entire population of the species by natural adversities such as droughts, floods, earthquakes, etc.

2) When there is a violation of the ecological balance between a species and its environment.

3) When it is necessary for a large segment of the members of a species to migrate over long distances.

With regard to point 2 above, each population has its own territory, its own area of habitation (**S**). On that area a certain number of individuals of the species can live without disturbing the ecological balance of the habitat system (**n**). Thus, a certain quantity of population is constantly maintained by the internal mechanisms of the population itself. What kinds of mechanisms are they? What forces are in action that determine the number of members existing in balanced relationship to their occupied

territory? We can illustrate these concepts with rabbits, where an interesting phenomena was observed when a serious disproportion arose between their numbers and their environment.

Fluctuations in the birth rate of rabbits and the influence of external factors lead to **fluctuations in their population density**. In the case of unfavorable external factors **the population densities decrease and become less than optimum** for other functions (N^-). With the return of a more favorable external situation the birth rate increases and in a while the population density returns to optimum (**Fig. 39**). When the population density **increases beyond the optimum level** (N^+), processes arise within the colony leading to **an increase in the death rate and a decrease in the birth rate**, in time returning the population density to an optimal level (**Fig. 40**). What is the mechanism acting within each population that triggers these effects and **WHO** or **WHAT** sets it in action?

Rabbits eat grass, consuming **the vegetative biomass** that grows on the territory occupied by the population. **The amount of biomass is dependent on the weather, solar activity, the availability of water, etc.** In other words, **a given territory of the surface of the planet can produce only a certain amount of biomass in a given period of time**. By eating the grass, each rabbit decreases the amount of growing biomass. To maintain normal life and health a rabbit will eat a certain amount of vegetative biomass, $m(n)$. The entire population will consume **$m(n) \times n$** amount of the growing biomass. If the population is excessive, there is a definite possibility that the entire vegetative biomass in a given area will be consumed. The area will become a desert, soon leading to the demise of the rabbits.

To ensure the existence of the ecological system over a long period of time, the following condition must be met: **the vegetative biomass reproduced on a given territory per unit of time must be equal in volume or greater than the vegetative biomass consumed by living organisms** — in this case, rabbits. It is logical to assume that, given N^- number of rabbits and an excess amount of reproducing biomass this would favor an increase in the birth rate of rabbits through a change in several physiological parameters.

However, it is not immediately apparent why in the opposite case, that of an overpopulation of rabbits, there will be a decrease in birth rate and an increase in the death rate. But this does happen even when the vegetative biomass, for a certain time, up to several years, is capable of supporting the life of an N^+ population and a high birth rate. It is difficult for us to imagine that rabbits would consciously reason that they will have nothing to eat in the following year and would therefore cut their consumption of food, or think about regulating the size of their families. What then happens in this case? What functions monitor and regulate the quantity of rabbits and the population of other species living on a given area? Let us try to analyze this phenomenon and understand another enigma of nature.

The psi-field, ω , emitted by every individual of a colony is interactive with that of every other member of the colony and affects the processes taking place in each individual organism. Let us suppose that there is an optimum density of the popula-

tion's shared psi-field, which ensures an optimal existence for the individuals of the species and the maintenance of ecological balance.

$$W = \int \int_{n s} k(N; S) \omega dS dN \quad (1)^{12}$$

where

W — is the shared psi-field of the population,

S — is the area of the natural habitat of the population,

ω — is the psi-field emitted by one individual of the species,

$k(N; S)$ is the coefficient of interaction between individual psi-fields within the population.

The colony with a higher than optimum population generates a shared psi-field that is excessively dense while the colony with a lower than optimum population generates a lower-density shared psi-field.

$$\begin{aligned} \Delta W^{(+)} = & \int \int_{N^+ S} k(N; S) \omega dS dN - \\ & - \int \int_{n s} k(N; S) \omega dS dN \end{aligned}$$

(2) — (greater than optimum density).

$$\begin{aligned} \Delta W^{(-)} = & \int \int_{n s} k(N; S) \omega dS dN - \\ & - \int \int_{N S} k(N; S) \omega dS dN \end{aligned}$$

(3) — (less than optimum density).

An excessively dense psi-field, ΔW^+ , depresses the physiological processes of each individual organism.

Hormonal disorders increase and pituitary and thymus activity become blocked, leading to a decrease in the birth rate and a reduction in life span. A psi-field density

¹² The complete derivation of the formula for species self-regulation may be found in Appendix 1.

ΔW^- , that is too low, stimulates the same processes resulting in an increase in the birth rate, etc.

It is precisely the shared psi-field of the population W, generated by all individual species of the population, that is the monitoring mechanism regulating the balance between the population of the species and the ecological system.

The coefficient of interaction, $k(N;S)$, denoting the extent of interaction between the psi-fields within the population is very important. The coefficient of interaction depends upon the number of individuals comprising a population and the size of the natural habitat occupied by the population. For most species the important range is:

$$0 < k(N;S) < 1$$

There are, however, situations where this parameter can have a negative value or where it can be larger than 1 (one). Let us consider the natural phenomena that affect $k(N;S)$ causing the values of this parameter to change.

In times of severe drought, when members of different species are in danger of extinction, an interesting phenomenon takes place. All the individuals of the species crowd together, numbering millions, and sometimes billions of individuals (locusts, termites, etc.). These population masses, “superorganisms,” with a $k(N;S) = 1$ manifest very interesting behaviors. In this situation the individual psi-field completely disappears and is replaced by the shared psi-field of the entire colony. In the case of rats and mice, they move in a huge mass, overcoming all obstacles to reach a place where there is no drought and where the population can survive. The interesting aspect of this phenomenon is as follows:

1. When the migrating species meets an obstacle like a brook, river, or gully, etc., thousands, and at times, hundreds of thousands fill the obstacles with their bodies and die, while the remaining millions, using the bridge of their own species, continue moving forward. It is interesting that in the superorganismic state the instinct of self-preservation is completely absent. Each individual becomes like the cell of a huge organism that can afford the unnoticed loss of thousands, and, at times, hundred of thousands of “cells” for the sake of saving itself.

2. The migration of the superorganism, of the entire colony, takes place over a distance of tens, sometimes even hundreds of kilometers, to reach territories that are safe for habitation. The migration of this entire mass of living organisms navigates in the correct direction, even though no individual of the species has ever before left its previous territory. **How** does the aggregate of individuals **know which way** to go, or how to get to a region where none of the migrating individuals has ever been before?

Let us try to explain this phenomenon. The rapid increase in temperature, absence of water, and decrease in food supply for several days affect an animal through its cortical receptors, as well as influencing other brain functions, including the individual's protective psi-field, ω . Unfavorable natural conditions create a prospect of physical death for any or all members of the entire population in its natural habitat. Because of its limited capacity the brain of a single individual is unable to handle

such a complicated situation. Therefore, in the case of any adverse natural phenomenon, **a change in the condition of the cortex occurs — an inhibition of the reflexes which generate and monitor the protective psi-field of the individual**. As the individual's protective psi-field disappears, the coefficient of interaction, $k(N;s)$, becomes equal to one and the individual's nervous system becomes incorporated as a component element in the shared nervous system of the superorganism.

In most species the superorganism phenomenon occurs only in extreme situations. When normal conditions are reinstated, the condition of the nervous system of the individual returns to normal and the superorganismic state is discontinued, $k(N;s) < 1$. During evolution the acquisition of the superorganismic state enabled certain species to survive and adapt to changing states of natural conditions.

In the superorganismic state the cumulative density of the population's psi-fields enables the shared nervous systems to solve qualitatively new tasks, such as orientation in space during migration over long distances. This is accomplished at the price of damage to individuals, who are part of the superorganism. If the condition is not prolonged, after reinstatement of the normal protective psi-field, the organism gradually returns to normal.

The superorganism phenomenon manifests periodically in a number of species. Most of the time it is related to cyclic changes in the climate. An example may be found in the phenomenon of birds migrating across great distances. As ornithological research has shown, in six cases out of ten, a flock of migrating birds is led to a wintering place by young birds making their first flight and unacquainted with the route. What is interesting is that a single bird, even if experienced, or a small group of birds, would never dare to set out for the wintering place alone. They may die of hunger or freeze to death, but nothing can make them embark on such a flight. Why does this occur?

In the course of evolution birds developed the ability to create a superorganismic state. It manifests before the start of the migration period. The basis of this phenomenon is an internal annual biological cycle stimulated by temperature fluctuations (cold spells), diminishing daylight, and reduction of the quantity and quality of available food. The influence of natural conditions leads, within a certain range, to variations in the times of flight. In the spring and summer time, when weather conditions are favorable for such life events as the hatching and rearing of chicks, the brain of each individual creates a protective psi-field providing the most favorable condition for the functioning of the organism as a whole (**Fig. 41**). The annual biological cycle leads to a weakening of the individual's protective psi-field, a necessary condition for the manifestation of the superorganismic state, which in the case of migratory birds, is reduced in intensity to the point of near vanishing by the fall season (**Fig. 42**).

The traditionally offered belief that natural life threatening factors are sufficient to trigger inner annual biological cycles is contradicted by the fact that abrupt temporary cold spells fail to motivate birds to leave for their wintering places, even though some of them, by remaining at home, will die.

Thus, changes in biochemical processes within the cells of an organism (especially in the nerve cells of the brain) trigger changes in the structure of the psi-fields emitted by the neurons and also shifts in the organism's psi-field as a whole. The psi-field changes from a closed to an open structure, i.e. the coefficient of interaction, $k(N;S)$, approaches unity.

In each species of bird, a minimum number of individuals is necessary for the emergence of the superorganism state. In this state a flock of birds (sharing their nervous system) can orient themselves by the sun and stars, compute a flight trajectory, and calculate the optimum rate of travel. In doing so, the shared nervous system in the superorganismic state can work with a number of random factors — the force and direction of the wind, changes in flight velocity dependent on atmospheric conditions, etc. (**Fig. 43**).

An individual of the species would be incapable of performing all of these complicated actions. An individual's nervous system enables it to solve problems related to everyday activities and normal functions of the organism. The degree of development of an individual's nervous system corresponds to the complexity of existing conditions in the habitat of the species. Thus, in the process of evolution, many species developed the ability to create a mutual nervous system of the population as a whole (the superorganismic state) in situations where the capabilities and actions of an individual did not permit it to solve problems encountered in suddenly-developing survival challenges.

The evolutionary process has also created species whose individual members have a nervous system structure capable of solving complicated tasks. Such a structure is a system of billions of interactive neurons, concentrated in one individual. The interaction between neurons comprising this system is maximum and the coefficient of interaction approaches 1 (one). At the same time, the entire system is maximally insulated and impervious to the impact of other psi-fields — (the coefficient of interaction between it and other such systems, $k(N;S)$, approaches zero).

This happens as a result of the protective (insulating) psi-field created by the individuals of the species. Where you have such complex psi-fields, maximum insulation is necessary to permit the acquisition and consolidation of the individual's experience for transmission to future generations **through changes in the genetic code and direct training**. The presence of an individual, complex psi-field, containing billions of interactive neurons, makes it possible to create specialized functions, thus securing life-support processes and related behavioral responses for the processing and storing of information about the internal and external milieu. At a certain stage in the gathering of information and the development of such a psi-system, comes the ability to analyze the information and implement intelligent action and responses to the processes unfolding in the environment.

As this occurs, a large number of neurons begin specializing in the transformation of one kind of matter into another, in the creation of holograms and the synthesis of the individual's etheric, astral, and mental bodies. The synthesis and development of these bodies is only possible at a **particular level of evolutionary devel-**

opment of the cerebral neurons. This happens only in the presence of a critical quantity and quality of information entering the brain through optical, auditory, tactile and olfactory channels via a variety of neural signals.

These signals make a change in the qualitative state of the external and internal milieu of the receptor neurons. The neurons collect this information in aggregates of various kinds of matter; **this leads to quantitative and qualitative changes in organic and inorganic molecules and in the ions contained inside the neurons. Ultimately, the result is a change in the value of the cell's microcosmic curvature. When the curvature reaches a value of $\Delta L'_2$, the qualitative barrier between the physical and astral levels opens.** Primary matters then flow over to the astral level and start the development of **the neurons' astral body** (Chapter 2).

In human beings, a child's brain should absorb a certain critical amount of information, preferably of high quality. A variety of many kinds of information should be absorbed before the age of 4 to 6 years for the overall development of the brain. If the brain does not receive a critical, minimal amount of information by the age of 4-6 years, its neurons fail to fully develop etheric bodies. Only full development of the etheric body can provide the necessary changes in a neuron's microcosmic curvature to open the qualitative barrier between the etheric and astral levels. A brain without a fully developed etheric body **cannot evolve any further**. It can provide all the biologically necessary requirements of an organism, but it would be **impossible to discern any signs of intelligence in the thinking and actions of such a child**. The condition just described occurs in only two situations:

a) When the child's brain **does not receive at least a minimal quantity and quality of information from the external environment, or the quality and quantity of the information that is received is not sufficient to change the qualitative structure of the cerebral neurons**. An example illustrating this point can be taken from the real life cases of the "Mowgli," small children, who, by chance, are raised by wild animals. Their behavior and life style are entirely consonant with the behavior and life style of the animals that nurtured them. When such children are brought into human society, they continue behaving like animals and are never able to acquire human behavioral traits.

b) Sometimes it is **impossible** for a child's brain **to develop normally because of genetic problems or the existence of various types of infections and their secreted toxins present in the cerebrospinal fluid**. This results in inborn or acquired mental retardation with varying degrees of severity. In some cases there is no development at all, or when it does occur, it is so far below normal that it also eventuates in mental retardation.

However, if the brain receives the required quantities and qualities of information in time, the necessary change in the microcosmic curvature of the neurons is effected and the qualitative barrier between the etheric and astral levels disappears. This initiates **the formation and evolutionary development of the astral bodies of the cerebral neurons**. Upon completion of the development of the neuronal astral body, the microscopic curvature of the neuron changes by a value of $\Delta L'_3$ (Chapter 2)

and the qualitative barrier between the astral and mental levels of the cerebral neurons disappears.

Conditions are then established **for the formation and evolution of the mental bodies of the neuron**. Along with the evolution of each of the bodies (etheric, astral, and mental) the properties of the physical neurons change significantly as does the ability of the brain to store and process information that is coming to it from the internal and external worlds.

The evolutionary development of psi-fields is associated with the establishment of self awareness and individuality. Such individuals obtain the ability to affect nature in a variety of ways and develop various methods of exerting that influence. They then reconstruct their habitat into forms more suitable for themselves, unfortunately, too often disturbing the ecological balance in doing so. There is a maximally acceptable limit of the capacity of an ecological system to tolerate intervention. When it is exceeded it usually results in a violation of the system's integrity.

Intelligence in the full meaning of the word can be identified as such only when the evolutionary development of the species leads it to an understanding of its unity with nature and to activity which does not result in the destruction of the ecological system, but rather effects harmonious changes in nature without throwing it off balance. Ultimately this causes periodic evolutionary changes in ecological systems.

Several species of living organisms on planet Earth have complex psi-fields. All are classified together in one subclass — the higher mammals. Two particular species, **dolphins** and **humans**, have a special place in this subclass. Human beings (*Homo Sapiens*) are the only intelligent species possessing a complex psi-field whose evolutionary development **has been and still is accompanied by the changes they make in their ecological system**. Unfortunately, rather than a state of harmonious unity, human beings are in a “state of war” with nature, characterized by infrequent armistices. It is to be hoped that harmony will be achieved in the near future.

The special position of man in our ecosystem is an immediate consequence of his behavioral peculiarities. First of all, he is a social, upright creature. The availability of a pair of “free” limbs, i.e. arms — enabled man during his evolutionary development to create work tools, the improvement of which eventually resulted in the ability to affect and change the environment according to human needs.

His social form of existence allowed man to solve another problem — the accumulation and transmission to subsequent generations of needed information (first in oral and later in written form). This knowledge, this accumulated experience, was not just the product of a human family, or tribe, but, in keeping with the evolution of the human race, stemmed from thousands, hundreds of thousands, in fact, millions of people over many generations.

The amount of accumulated information grew larger and larger from generation to generation as the qualitative content of the information kept changing. As they absorbed the experience of prior generations, the newer generations moved to the next,

higher level of evolutionary development. When mankind invented various kinds of mass information media — print, radio, television, the internet, etc. — an abrupt qualitative leap in development took place. This effect has been particularly noticeable in the last one hundred years. It is an enormous amount of anecdotal or observed information that is basically correct and is, in each particular instance, essentially true and consistent with reality. But the theoretical explanation of observed natural phenomena is based upon an erroneous logical foundation resulting in **“rational man’s” bringing nature to the brink of catastrophe**. If the catastrophe does happen, the result will mean not only the death of mankind as a species of living nature, but the virtual devastation of the entire ecological system.

Once again it should be pointed out that a **human being is not born intelligent, but rather has only the potential of becoming intelligent**, provided that the brain absorbs all the necessary amounts of information in the form of knowledge and experience, of beliefs, laws, and moral codes accumulated by mankind. On the basis of all this information and his particular thought processes man then synthesizes his own “Ego.”

Where there is a harmonious evolution of the personality, a human individual can obtain a level of consciousness and capability consistent with **a true and harmonious merging with nature**. A question arises at this point — if many species of living organisms have acquired the ability to create a superorganismic state in critical situations in the course of their evolution, **is it possible to effect this phenomenon in humans and, if so, under what conditions?**

A human being has a complex psi-field containing fourteen billion neurons, which, if appropriately developed, provides the ability to solve practically all problems that he might encounter. In addition, the neurons of the human brain possess the highest possible degree of interaction between themselves. Such a quality of interaction is impossible to achieve in the superorganismic state for the same reasons that it manifests in termites, bees, and ants, etc. In such a situation the superorganism, the hegelian “absolute” is not a developmental advance, but is, for many reasons (to be described in a later volume), a regression. Additionally, in the normal development of a human being the protective field created by the brain provides total insulation of the human psi-field from external influence. And in most cases it takes a push outward from within the psi-field to open that protective shield. This, however, requires two conditions:

a) **A high concentration of people occupying a small space. When this occurs each person’s psi-field impacts those of the people around him, and, conversely, the surrounding psi-fields adversely affect the individual’s protective shield. As a result, a person’s capacity to derive protection from his psi-field is substantially reduced.**

b) **When the protective capacity of the human psi-field is diminished, an emotional instability is experienced within, usually negative in tendency. When the emotional level reaches overload, the protective field becomes unstable and breaks down: every person in the group ceases to be an individual, as his brain surren-**

ders to the “mob mentality”. So all one has to is just “steer” the raging mob in the “right” direction and it blindly follows all the directives of whoever is manipulating it. This is how psi weapons manifest and operate.

In the history of mankind — both ancient and modern — we see many examples of such behavior. Interestingly, **in mob mentality, a human being often does things he would never consciously do in a normal state**. Most often the behavior exhibited in a mob even contradicts his ethical and moral principles.

If we then consider the fact that man uses **only three to five percent of his brain neurons for conscious activity**, while the other ninety-five to ninety-seven percent remains dormant, it is easy to imagine the following situation:

If, by chance, someone **possesses a “key” to access that ninety-five to ninety-seven percent of dormant brain power and knows how to open the “door,” he alone, or a group of perpetrators, can control and manipulate countless numbers of people**. When this happens, those exposed to such control feel nothing at all, act blindly and fail to understand **why** and **what** has made them behave so irrationally.

It is a very powerful and horrendous weapon, much worse than radiation, bombs, chemical or bacteriological weapons, because people subjected to its effect do not even suspect that they are under its influence. Thus, there is perfect impunity for **those who use it**. Most often they are the ones who **try to convince their victims that the very idea of such an influence is absurd and nonsensical**. They also wax very persuasive, **hiding behind false ideologies and false logic — knowing full well what they do**. **The psi weapon is the most inhuman of all existing in the world today, and if it ends up in the hands of evil forces, we can all get ready to believe in the imminent approach of “judgment day.”**

Thus, in humans, the superorganism state can arise spontaneously — from the impact of negative emotions inflaming a crowd of people, or from psi weapons aimed at the human psi-field, for the purpose of control and manipulation.

Summary

Nature formed three types of psi-fields of living organisms.

1. A permanently functioning complex psi-field consists of a colony of individuals of the same species. The size of such a colony is contingent upon the complexity of the problems faced by its psi-field and the complexity of each individual’s psi-field. The psi-field of a single member is an open system: $k(N;s) \rightarrow 1$. The psi-field of the colony is composed of a superimposition of psi-fields of all individuals comprising the colony. The shared psi-field of the given system is a constantly functioning superorganism, a closed structure under conditions normal for its existence. Examples are termites, bees, and ants, etc.

2. A temporarily functioning complex psi-field consists of a colony of individuals of the same species. The size of the colony depends upon the complexity of the problem needed to be solved by the shared psi-field and upon the complexity of the

individual members' psi-fields. The reasons for the emergence of such temporary superorganismic psi-fields, are as follows:

a) A capability acquired during the process of evolution ensuring the survival and evolution of the species. Example: migratory birds.

b) Sudden, life-threatening changes in natural events: this applies to practically all species. Normally the psi-field of each individual is a closed system: $k_{com}(N;S) \rightarrow 0$. Under the impact of changing natural events that threaten death to the entire population, the structure of each individual's psi-field changes. The closed system transforms into an open system: $k_{com}(N;S) \rightarrow 1$. Upon reestablishment of natural conditions that are normal for that species, the structure of each individual's psi-field reverts to its original state.

3. A permanently active complex psi-field is an interactive accumulation of several billion neurons concentrated in one individual. The psi-field of each neuron is an open system: $k(N;S) \rightarrow 1$, whereas the shared psi-field of all neurons is a closed system: $k_{com}(N;S) \rightarrow 0$. Interacting neurons create a shared protective psi-field ensuring the stable functioning of the system as a whole. The human psi-field possesses the capacity for self-perfection and evolutionary development. From the day of birth the human brain actively absorbs all information accessible to its sensory organs. Along with the accumulation of information a qualitative change takes place in the structure of the original neurons. The attainment of a certain quantitative level of information induces a qualitative leap in the evolution of the human brain. Individuals begin to differentiate themselves from their surrounding environment, acquiring the ability to understand processes in themselves and in nature. The human brain becomes an instrument for studying and understanding nature and for self-perfection.

The amount of information necessary for a qualitative leap in development cannot be accumulated during even a thousand life times. This is the aggregate experience of hundreds of generations, millions of people. Only the absorption of all the information accumulated by mankind can give the human brain the ability to advance in its evolution.

In attempting to give meaning to these phenomena, one may well ask: if the psi-fields regulate processes within each species, in both normal and extreme conditions of existence, what mechanisms, then, regulate processes taking place in the ecological system as a whole?

Chapter 4. Formation of the ecological system of planet Earth

The first life appeared in the primeval ocean for a variety of reasons (Chapter 2). Most crucial was **the absorption and neutralization of lethal fractions of solar and cosmic radiation by sea water**. Of equal importance was **the rich harvest of simple and complex organic molecules, generated by atmospheric electrical discharge from the existing concentration of inorganic molecules present in the sea**.

The sea water was constantly being saturated by gases from the Earth's primitive atmosphere, an atmosphere consisting of large quantities of carbon dioxide, sulphurous gases, nitrogen and hydrogen. These were the essential conditions for the beginning of life. (See Chapter 2 for a detailed description of corresponding qualitative processes which took place in the primal ocean).

After viruses, **the first living organisms were simple monocellular organisms. Through the process of photosynthesis these early life forms were able to absorb the visible spectrum of the sun, thereby synthesizing within themselves the organic compounds necessary for their vital activity**. To achieve photosynthesis, these primitive organisms harvested the needed organic compounds entirely from sea water, where, as we noted above, they were created through atmospheric energy discharge.

Photosynthesis is an evolutionary advance that gave an enormous impetus to the development of life on the planet.

The first vegetable organisms — still very primitive — utilized only a fraction of the sunlight radiating onto the ocean's surface. Phytoplankton, for example, absorbs about **1.5– 2%** of radiated sunlight. The growth rate of vegetable biomass is a function of its Biological Efficiency Factor (BEF).

Phytoplankton conquered the primitive ocean, which then became the home of the simplest monocellular plants. During photosynthesis phytoplankton absorbed carbon dioxide dissolved in sea water while concurrently releasing oxygen as a by-product. At night (when photosynthesis was impossible), phytoplankton lived on the organic compounds which were synthesized during the day.

These compounds served to replenish the organism and maintain its structural integrity and activity. Additionally phytoplankton was able to break down organic compounds and, in the process, (the opposite of photosynthesis), absorb the oxygen dissolved in the sea water as a by-product of photosynthesis. Thus, **during any process where organic compounds dissolve, oxygen is absorbed and carbon dioxide is released simultaneously as a by-product**.

Animal microorganisms (except for Green Euglena and similar organisms) could not arise in the primeval ocean, even under ideal conditions, until phytoplankton and later, more developed plants, saturated the ocean's surface with sufficient oxygen to support their life. (Animal organisms evolved from the same

simple plants we have just described). Therefore, **the first and simplest ecological system can be considered to exist only from the moment when living organisms capable of absorbing organic compounds appear. An ecological system is nothing but a balance between all forms and species of living organisms and their habitat.**

With the appearance of multicellular living organisms, **the next qualitative stage of life development began.** Perfecting themselves in a merciless struggle for survival, multicellular organisms, initially vegetable organisms, acquired new qualities, such as **the ability to distribute and assign various life-support functions to groups of its constituent cells.** Thus cell specialization, geared to the biological needs of the entire organism, came into being. This greatly enhanced the cellular activity of the multicellular plants that were capable of photosynthesis. The **BEF**, already up to four percent in algae (the multicellular plants of the primeval ocean) increased as well.

With the appearance of multicellular plants the next growth spurt of biomass began in the primeval ocean. This in turn, led to a rapid rise in the number and diversity of animal multicellular organisms. **The animal multicellular organisms by virtue of their tremendous activity, in their struggle for survival, began to dominate the plants.**

Nevertheless, they still were dependent upon the quantity of biomass created by plants through the process of photosynthesis. Gradually, three main groups of animal multicellular organisms emerged:

- 1) **herbivorous**;
- 2) **carnivorous** (consumers of herbivorous animal organisms);
- 3) **omnivorous** (consumers of both plants and animals).

The evolutionary development of plants led to the robust development of animals. The ecological system became more and more sophisticated and diverse. What supported the harmony and balance between all species of living organisms inhabiting an ecosystem, and how was this effected?

Psi-fields, emitted by every living organism, became the basis of the mechanism of self-regulation of the entire ecological system. Self-regulation evolved within every species of living organism. (This mechanism was explained in detail in Chapter 3). Gradually the oxygen from the sea water created by photosynthesis reached the atmosphere, and increased in concentration. During atmospheric electrical discharges a certain amount of atmospheric oxygen was transformed into ozone, eventually creating **an ozone layer** of the planet in the stratosphere. The ozone layer became a protective screen against the harsh solar and cosmic radiation. As time went by, the ozone layer gradually grew larger and finally became thick enough to reflect the greater part of that radiation. **Conditions for the development of life on the planet's land surface were thus created.**

Plants then began to explore the land, at first developing at the outer edge of the mainland, then moving deeper and deeper into it. Wolf-claws and club moss (*Lycopodia*), horse-tails and *Filicinae* were the first conquerors of the land. The first terrestrial plants developed in an atmosphere far richer in carbon dioxide than the sea water, a fact which lent further impetus to the development of photosynthesis. By this time, the **BEF** of these plants had reached five percent.

Animals followed the plants onto the land. The first terrestrial animals originating in the course of evolution were amphibians, choanate, or lobe-finned fish. The formation of an ecological system on land had begun. The development of life upon land had a much more vigorous character. Gigantic horse-tails, ivies and ferns created an enormous quantity of vegetable biomass. Only large animals were able to consume such huge plants. A time of giants had come to the Earth. After amphibians, mammals, which had a variety of evolutionary advantages, appeared on the land and soon began to dominate.

A reign of giants — dinosaurs — prevailed for hundreds of millions of years. But, as a result of photosynthesis, enormous amounts of atmospheric gases were removed from the atmosphere to build up the planet's biomass, and the concentration of atmospheric carbon dioxide in the atmosphere began to decrease. The carbon dioxide amassed in the atmosphere before the appearance of life, was gradually used up by giant plants over hundreds of millions of years.

The "reserve" of the planet's carbon dioxide began to decrease, though it continued to enter the atmosphere through volcanic eruptions and as a product of the metabolic activity of living organisms. Little by little, Earth's tectonic activity diminished, and less gaseous material, including carbon dioxide was released into the atmosphere. As a result, the giant plants on land began to die off and ultimately their quantity became insufficient to sustain the dinosaurs whose numbers also gradually declined.

Better developed vegetable organisms — gymnosperms, whose **BEF** had reached seven percent, began to replace the giant plants — ivies, horse-tails and tree-ferns. While conditions were favorable for their growth and development, the giant plants had inhibited the development of the gymnosperms, but with the death of these giants, gymnosperms obtained the freedom to develop.

These plants were significantly smaller than their predecessors. The animals, which replaced the reign of giants were rather modest in size as well. Yet, from the standpoint of evolution they were better developed animals. The descendants of dinosaurs and amphibians became inhabitants of the new world, as the survivors of the former dominant species.

The emerging angiosperms (enclosed-seed organisms) which had a **BEF** of up to ten percent, had emerged by then, but did not supplant the gymnosperms, as the latter had done earlier with ivies, horse-tails and tree-ferns. They simply adapted to different climate belts of the planet. Also, the gymnosperms proved to be better adapted to severe climatic conditions and, therefore, inhabited the cooler portions of the planet.

In the course of formation of the Earth's flora, its fauna developed abundantly as well. **The latter type of ecological system has lasted up to the present day.**

Nature has not yet been able to create a vegetable organism with a **BEF** exceeding ten percent. In the early stages of the development of our ecosystem the appearance of new types of plants led to an energetic transformation of the animal world, but with the emergence of the angiosperms this process came to an end. In the beginning, unoccupied ecological niches were filled with new species that appeared in the course of evolution, but after all **the vacant niches were taken, a new species could survive only by displacing another from its established base.** This resulted in a qualitative evolution of animals on the planet. This evolution then moved to still **another qualitative level**, the normal development of which led inevitably to **the emergence of intelligence.**

This is precisely what occurred and still occurs on many planets of the cosmos. An intelligent species, **Homo Sapiens**, also appeared on our planet Earth. But **HOMO SAPIENS CAME FROM OUTSIDE** our planet and populated an ecological niche that was previously occupied by Neanderthals, who appeared in the natural course of the evolution of life on our planet. By virtue of the fact that Neanderthals were more numerous, better adapted to earth conditions and much stronger, Homo Sapiens, in his initial stages of development, was totally unable to evict them by himself. Extraterrestrial agents did this for him and artificially transplanted man into a biological niche on Earth. In a later volume we will discuss how this happened and the agents responsible for it.

At this point I should like to emphasize just one specific attribute of **living organisms**, which they must have in the course of their evolution in order **to develop intelligence**, namely, they **must be omnivorous**. The reason is simple. Any organism, without harming itself, can break down a certain amount of externally ingested poison. The critical dosage is idiosyncratic for each individual of the species. If exceeded it will compromise the various functions or systems of the organism. For example, **vegetable poisons**, which can be found, in some degree, in every plant, **negatively affect the cells of neurons**. So it is no accident that cells, similar in structure to neurons, cannot be found in plants. The doses of vegetable poisons eaten by herbivores, that is, plant-consuming animals, exceed the amount that these animals are capable of metabolizing. The excess of vegetable poisons adversely **affects the evolution of neurons and makes it impossible for neurons of these animals to acquire a mental body**, without which the manifestation of **a certain level of intelligence is impossible.**

Carnivorous animals ingest such enormous quantities of ptomaine and other animal poisons that they are unable to metabolize them completely. Ptomaine so profoundly alters their metabolism that the cerebral neurons of these animals cannot receive the requisite quantities of elements essential for the formation and development of mental bodies.

Omnivorous animals ingest both vegetable and animal poisons with their food. But the quantities eaten are within the range that allows them to completely break

down the ingested poisons. This permits conditions favorable for **the development of neurons with mental bodies, and therefore intelligence.**

Thus, **the vegetable forms of life are the foundation for any ecological system.** What, then, determines the quantity of vegetable biomass in an ecological system? How much vegetable biomass is necessary for its survival? The basic and decisive features for any ecological system are the following:

a) the strength of solar photonic radiation (sunlight) reaching a unit of surface per unit of time, within a certain allowable range, which if exceeded, is lethal to all living creatures.

b) the BEF of vegetable organisms, that is, the fraction of sunlight absorbed by plants and utilized for the synthesis of organic compounds.

c) the quantity of plants of different types.

d) the quality of plants of one type.

Expressed mathematically we have the following equation:

$$\int_0^s \int_0^i \int_0^j W(t) \Psi(ij) n(ij) ds di dj = m_{ij}^j(t) \quad (4)$$

where:

$m_{ij}^j(t)$ — equals the quantity of vegetable biomass synthesized per unit of time by all plants growing on a unit of the planet's surface. Herbivorous animals consume a portion of that vegetable biomass, and in turn, synthesize from it, after appropriate metabolic activity, the following amount of biomass:

$$\int_0^s \int_0^a \int_0^b m_{ij}^j(t) \Psi(ab) n(ab) ds da db = m_{ij}^{ab}(t) \quad (5)$$

where:

$m_{ij}^{ab}(t)$ — equals the biomass of herbivorous animals, synthesized per unit of time per unit of area.

Carnivores, in turn, consume herbivorous animals. The biomass that carnivorous animals synthesize from the quantity of herbivores eaten, after appropriate metabolic processes, yields the following:

$$\int_0^s \int_0^c \int_0^q m_{ij}^{ab}(t) \Psi(cq) n(ab) ds dc dq = m_{ij}^{cq}(t) \quad (6)$$

where:

$m_p^{cq}(t)$ — equals the biomass of carnivorous living organisms, synthesized per unit of time per unit of area. We should note that all species, which consume both living and dead herbivorous organisms, are classified as carnivores. We may now construct a mathematical model of an ecological system, using the above-mentioned equations (4), (5) and (6), as follows:

$$m_p^{ij}(t) + m_p^{ab}(t) + m_p^{cq}(t) = \text{const}_\Psi \quad (7)$$

Biological research has shown that ten percent of the biomass from plants becomes biomass for herbivores and ten percent of the biomass from herbivores becomes biomass for carnivorous animals.

We may render this equation in a slightly different but more obvious form by extracting the common factor from the brackets and substituting the value for each item:

$$\int_0^s \int_0^i \int_0^j W(s) \Psi(ij) n(ij) ds di dj / [1 + \dots + \dots] = \text{const}_\Psi \quad (8)^{13}$$

From equation (8) we note that the entire spectrum of nature's living forms, as well as their qualitative and quantitative composition is determined by:

a) the amount of solar radiation striking a unit of the planet's surface per unit of time;

b) the **BEF** of vegetable organisms, i.e., the extent to which sunlight is absorbed and transformed into vegetable biomass. The coefficient $\Psi(ij)$ is distinctive for each type of plant and can vary within the following range:

$$0 \leq \Psi(ij) \leq 1$$

The most developed types of vegetable organisms on Earth have a **BEF** of ten percent. Thus, the complexity and diversity in form and type of a given ecological system depend, primarily, on two parameters: $W(s)$ and $\Psi(ij)$

Let us consider that the amount of solar radiation striking a unit of the planet's surface per unit of time changes very slowly, and gradually diminishes from the moment of life's origin on the planet to the present time; and that, furthermore, during this same time period a more sophisticated, more perfected ecological system replaces the simpler system. We may then arrive at the following conclusion:

The BEF is the basic parameter determining the diversity of form and type which constitute an ecological system. Equation (8) is the fundamental law of the evolution of living matter. Moreover, the regular appearance of diverse life forms (not just proteinaceous) on many different planets obeys this fundamental law.

However, solar radiation is not the only source for the origin of life, as it occurred on planet Earth; other currents of primary matters around other planets in

¹³ The complete derivation of the formula for ecological systems may be found in Appendix 2.

space will also lead naturally to the appearance of distinctive life forms. **The diversity of life forms is natural.**

Aside from that, the conclusion from equation (8) is that the possibility exists for artificially creating plants with a **BEF** that exceeds that of the angiosperms, (the enclosed seed-plants), which possess the highest **BEF** on the planet, i.e., ten percent.

This will provide us with the key to controlling the evolution of our ecological system, the opportunity to create qualitatively new ecosystems, and the solution of many environmental and other problems which beset mankind!

Chapter 5. Evolutionary cycles on planet Earth: the multidimensionality of life

The qualitative distinction between living and non-living matter is **in the structure of organic molecules which make up the cells of any living organism**. These molecules are constantly oscillating and changing the microcosmic dimensions of the cell: **When a certain critical value in dimension is reached, the qualitative barrier between the physical and etheric levels disappears and primary matters flow from the physical to the etheric level**. A duplicate of the cell on the physical level is formed on the etheric level out of **G** matter (mechanism explained in Chapter 2). This process is the synthesis of **the etheric body of the cell**.

At a certain stage of evolution multicellular life forms appear, every cell of which functions autonomously for the benefit of the organism as a whole. All such cells stem from an abundant pool of the simplest, most primitive cells. A well-balanced system is one in which all cellular functions are coordinated into a physically solid system — **the physical body of the multicellular organism**. What happens, then, to the etheric bodies of the cells of a multicellular organism?

The basis of life for a monocellular organism is **harmony between the cell's physical and etheric bodies, characterized by a circulation of primary matters between the two levels**. For a multicellular organism the basis of life is not only harmony between the physical and etheric bodies of each separate cell, but **a harmony, as well, between the etheric bodies of all the cells which make up that organism**. In other words, the etheric bodies of its cells create a solid system on the etheric level as well — **the etheric body of the multicellular organism** (Figs. 44 and 45).

Life is a balance of the processes between an organism's physical and etheric bodies. As multicellular organisms evolved, their physical cells began to specialize in various functions necessary to support the life and vitality of the entire organism. With further evolution, the cells performing the various functions were modified both internally and externally. This led to the appearance of **different types of cells in an organism**. The difference in structure of these cells led to a change in their influence on their cellular microcosm: As a result, certain types of cells acquired new spiritual qualities. The change in microcosmic size resulted in **the opening of the qualitative barrier between the cell's physical and astral bodies**. The union of the astral bodies created by each cell resulted in a unitary astral body of the entire multicelled organism.

An astral body formed from one kind of matter, **G**, is called **the lower astral body** (Figs. 46, 47), and that formed from two kinds of matter, **G** and **F**, is called **the higher astral body** (Figs. 48, 49).

Before the development of the higher astral body, the evolution of living matter passed through many evolutionary stages and, in the process, created a multitude of diverse organisms and forms. A few species managed to acquire higher astral bodies;

those whose neurons formed a solid concentration within the organism's skull, a **brain**, consisting of many billions of neurons (a human brain has fourteen billion).

All species with higher astral bodies belong to the class of **superior mammals**, i.e., **elephants, dolphins and homo sapiens**. And only members of the human species, because of their special qualities and brain development have the opportunity to acquire other spiritual bodies on different planetary levels (i.e., **first, second, third, and fourth mental bodies**).

As the human brain assimilated and qualitatively interpreted the immense volume of information accumulated by the human race during its entire existence on planet Earth, the brain changed in structure and function (mostly on the etheric and astral levels). At the same time the etheric and astral bodies of the neurons became denser, "heavier." With the organism's acquisition of a complete (lower and higher) astral body this led to the disappearance of the next qualitative barrier, that between the physical and first mental planes of the planet.

At this point, the synthesis and development of a first mental body begins (Figs. 50 and 51). The process involves the consecutive synthesis of three forms of primary matter, **G, F, and E**. With man's further harmonious spiritual development, the first mental body increases in density, which, at a certain stage of development, leads to an opening of the next qualitative barrier, that between the physical and second mental levels of the planet. This permits the elaboration of a second mental body from four consecutive kinds of matter — **G, F, E, and D** (Figs. 52 and 53).

Later, under similar conditions of harmonious development, a third mental body evolves from five kinds of matter, — **G, F, E, D, and C** (Figs. 54 and 55), and finally a fourth mental body develops, from six kinds of matter — **G, F, E, D, C, and B** (Figs. 56 and 57). All qualitative barriers of the planet now disappear for a person with the complete development of the fourth mental body. **For that person's spirit, the planetary cycle of evolution ends and the stage of cosmic evolution begins.**

The Yogis mistakenly believe that "Nirvana" — the consummate union with the "Absolute" — represents the highest evolutionary achievement of man. In reality this is only the end of the Earth cycle of evolution and the beginning of the cosmic cycle of evolution. We may liken it to when a person, about to leave home, pauses in the hallway, and after opening the door decides that his journey is over. **This idea halts a being's evolution and development.**

In the course of man's proper evolutionary development, the structure of his spirit approximates ever more closely that of his physical body (Figs. 44-57). This is the state most conducive for the functioning of the physical and spiritual bodies as a **single harmonious unit**. The presence of mental bodies endows man with enormous mental power. Such power enables one to influence the process of nature on both local and planetary levels; by thought alone to influence and control the processes unfolding in human society; to see and hear the past, present and future; to influence and shape the future of an individual or the entire human race; to travel in space and traverse the entire universe. The power of thought alone makes all these things possible and many, many more. Such power can only develop in someone with **innocent**

thoughts, a pure soul, and a generous, open heart — because only a person following the correct evolutionary path, the path of benevolence, can attain those higher levels.

Evil, despite its illusion of power, is **unable to evolve**. The imaginary power of evil lies in its pervasiveness: the majority of people cannot perceive what is happening on other levels of reality¹⁴.

Thus, we have examined all the stages of evolutionary development encountered in living organisms, from the simplest to the most complex, on all levels of the planet — etheric, astral, first, second, third and fourth mental levels. Every living organism possesses an essence or spirit. The minimum number of spirit bodies is one (the etheric) for simple, primitive organisms, and the maximum is six (etheric, astral, first second, third, and fourth mental bodies) for the most highly evolved humans. As long as any organism is alive, its physical body and spirit constitute a unity. What happens, then, to the spirit of an organism when it dies either from natural causes or through violence? What happens to the spirits of all living organisms who are still alive today or of species that existed during the four billion years of life on Earth?

Millions of living species have emerged and disappeared as life evolved on earth. A certain number of them still occupy ecological systems on the planet today. But billions and billions of species existed and became extinct. What happened to the spirits of those organisms? Perhaps spirits perish with the death of the physical body! If so, under what conditions? If not, what happens to them after the death of the physical body and where do they go? What happens to them after death? What becomes of the spirits of extinct species and what happens to the spirits of species still living in Earth's ecological systems?

Let us examine this interesting phenomenon of nature and turn over the next page of **life's mystery**.

At the moment of death the protective psi-field of an organism is destroyed. The primary matters released during that process erupt, opening a number of qualitative barriers between the various levels of the planet. An energetic channel opens and the spirit of the deceased organism moves through that channel to the planetary level identical to its structure. The spirits of the simplest living organisms (the majority) move to the etheric sphere. The spirits of all other organisms, depending on their level of evolutionary development, move to different sublevels of the planet's lower astral sphere. The spirits of more highly developed species move to various sublevels of the planet's higher astral sphere. Only the spirits of a small number of humans move to the earth's mental spheres.

When living organisms conceive, an energetic eruption, matching the energy potential of the organism, opens a channel through a number of barriers between the planetary spheres. The channel then pulls in a spirit genetically consonant with the

¹⁴ The highest power in the universe reveals itself in its harmonious and benign influence on natural processes and human affairs.

species. After the energy of the eruption occurring at conception dissipates, the barriers close. Following conception the spirit creates a physical body for itself out of the biomass it now occupies, the more complex organisms requiring longer periods of time. The cycle is closed... (**Fig.58**).

What happens, then, to the spirits of millions of living species that vanished from the Earth in the course of evolution? What happens to the spirits of extinct species at the moment of death? Like the spirits of all other living creatures, they move through the opened channels to the appropriate levels of the planet. But for them there will be no energetic eruption at conception because there is nothing on a physical level to create that eruption. The extinct beings **have lost their biological foundation**. Without a physical body none of them are capable of active evolution because only the disintegration of physical tissue provides the currents of primary matter necessary for the vitality and development of the spirit. Lacking a physical body, a spirit is left without a source of energy. Whatever energy it can utilize from its spiritual bodies is only enough **to preserve its integrity**. The spirits of extinct species, trapped in this dilemma, adapted to other levels of existence in a variety of ways. We will call such spirits “**astral animals**.”

For sustenance some astral beings took **to exploiting and devouring other spirits with weakened or non-existent protection**. Others sucked energy from spirits of extinct organisms as well as from the spirits of organisms which were still alive and developing on the physical sphere of the planet.

Other extinct animal spirits learned **to create a symbiotic relationship with organisms that are still living and developing on the physical level** (Chapter 6). Often the extinct spirits are structurally much simpler than the creatures they symbiotically inhabit. However each partner in the relationship benefits from this kind of adaptation. At the moment of human conception a spirit enters a fertilized egg (a zygote), which is a simple one-celled structure. But a spirit with a complex organization has a qualitative structure much different from that of the simple zygote. Because of this disparity, the rate of primary matter flow between the zygote and the spirit is so slow that the spirit would require a lengthy interval to build itself a new physical body from the biomass furnished by the zygote. How then can the problem of the structural disparity between growing biomass and spirit be overcome? Very simply!

Let us take, for example, the development of the human zygote. At the moment of the energetic eruption that accompanies conception, a spirit which is a genetic match to the species of the zygote (human, in this case) binds itself to the zygote. At the same time, one or more extinct animal spirits from the lower planetary levels closest to the (primitive) qualitative level of the zygote also enter. The zygote begins to develop and takes on a physical resemblance to the extinct animal spirit. The presence of the latter greatly benefits the zygote during the spirit's residence within it: the zygote develops until the biomass finally reaches a qualitative level equal to that of the inhabiting animal spirit. At this point, the inhabiting spirit undergoes a process similar to death: an energetic eruption opens a channel to the appropriate level for that spirit and it leaves the biomass. After the first spirit leaves, a new spirit from a

significantly more advanced species, and qualitatively attuned to the growing biomass, enters the biomass. This process repeats itself several times until the spirit, genetically identical to the species of the biomass (human in this case), can penetrate and harmonize with it, to create a physical body for itself in its own image.

All entities involved benefit from this arrangement: the extinct spirits use the developing biomass for a certain period of time, acquiring, in the process, energetic potential for themselves, but also improving and enhancing the development of the biomass host. The spirit with human genetics gains the opportunity to create a new physical body for itself much more rapidly than would otherwise occur. Because its qualitative structure is significantly different from that of the zygote, the more highly developed (in this case, human) species would rapidly reach extinction without this symbiotic process: the evolution of life would simply be impossible; highly organized life forms would not be born and, of course, the appearance of intelligent life would never come to pass.

Other extinct astral beings found different ways to adapt to new modes of existence through the use of so-called “**energetic vampirism.**” How does this come about? Let us recall that all living things have a protective psi-field around them that ensures optimal conditions for sustaining multicellular life forms and protecting them from the influence of other psi-fields. In addition, the psi-field holds a large supply of energy derived from the primary matters released from disintegrating food ingested by the organism. When energy vampires find a creature with little or no psi-field protection, they penetrate the shield, invade its spiritual structure and steal a portion of its life energy, the energetic potential generated by the victim’s physical body. This hastens the exhaustion and deterioration of the victim’s physical body and leads to premature death either violently or from natural causes. Energetic invasion of this kind can be either intermittent or continuous. To effect such penetration, astral beings must break through the qualitative barrier between the physical and etheric levels of the planet, and, in some cases rupture an additional barrier — that between the etheric and astral levels. Only some astral beings have the energetic potential required to accomplish this.

Another factor is the thickness of the barrier, which varies according to the time of day. It is maximum during the day and minimum at night, especially between midnight and 4:00 a.m. Thus most energy vampires are **night predators**. (This phenomenon will be explained in a later volume.) The density of the barrier also depends upon variations in the energetic structure of different places on the planet’s surface. In planetary regions of positive geomagnetic influence the barrier between the planetary spheres is most dense and strong, while in regions of negative geomagnetic zones the barriers may be very weak or completely absent, even during the day.

All organisms living within the bounds of such zones are subject to negative influences including the predation of astral vampires. This weakens and exhausts an organism, and may lead to its untimely death if it dwells too long in the negative zone. That is why a person whose bedroom is located within such a zone, sleeps poorly, is easily enervated, and within a brief time succumbs to serious illness, most often can-

cer, due to the deformation of the spiritual structures occurring in weakened zones (Volume 2 covers cancer in more detail).

In summary — spirits of extinct animals, i.e., astral animals, acquired several new qualities in the course of adapting to living conditions on other levels of the planet:

1) the ability to consume and exploit the life energy of organisms having a minimal or no protective shield.

2) the ability to foster the embryogenesis of creatures on the physical level through the successive symbiotic activity of various spirits from different evolutionary levels.

3) the development of energetic vampirism, by means of which spirits of extinct animals invade the physical bodies and spiritual structures of life forms possessing little or no psi-field protection on the physical level.

And so it came to pass that life on other levels of the planet took on novel and somewhat different forms — along with the emergence of some new and qualitatively distinctive ecological systems ([Fig. 59](#)).

Chapter 6. The evolution of the spirit, the organism and intelligence

The evolution of living matter leads to the appearance of organisms with **complex, multicellular psi-fields**. The development of such psi-systems results, at a certain level of development, in **self-awareness**. Thus, initially there is a primitive intelligence which, when developed, leads to an interaction between intelligent beings and nature. The complexity of a psi-system and its potential for evolution depend upon a critical, minimum **quantity of neurons and their degree of mutual interaction**. **But, how then, does the brain acquire the ability to think?**

The paradox is that **the brain neurons themselves cannot think**; they simply **provide the substructure for thinking** by generating energetic potentials and elaborating **spiritual** structures. For thinking on the most primitive level, neurons must have functioning etheric and astral structures on those levels. The process of more advanced thinking takes place on the **neuronal mental level**. But, **the development of the spirit is impossible without the proper development of the physical body**. Let us explore this more thoroughly, because it is the key to understanding the development of intelligence.

We shall begin with the incarnation of the spirit. When the sperm and ovum unite, a channel of energy erupts and penetrates through to the different spiritual levels (**etheric, astral, and mental**) of the planet. In accordance with **the level reached**, a spirit inhabiting that level enters the channel. What factors, then, determine the amplitude of that eruption?

- 1. The genetics of the parents.**
- 2. The parents' level of spiritual development.**
- 3. The geographical site of the conception.**
- 4. The astronomical orientation of the stars and planets at the moment of conception.**
- 5. The emotional state of the parents at the moment of conception.**
- 6. The presence of any toxins, (such as alcohol, nicotine, or narcotics) in the parents at the moment of conception.**
- 7. The ecological conditions of the environment where conception occurred.**

Stronger and healthier genetics in the parents increase the amplitude of the eruption. The surface of a planet has **regions of positive, negative and neutral energies**. Thus, the amplitude of eruption will **depend upon the quality of the energy at the site of conception**. **Positive energy will increase it, and negative energy will decrease it.** There are currents of energy coming from the stars, planets, and space, which **can also be positive or negative**. Furthermore, **different types of genetic structures react differently to the energy currents coming from the Earth and from space**. The same energy currents can have a positive influence on one type of

genetic structure and a negative influence on another. Regions of the planet differ in their energetic make-up and can cause positive or negative influences upon a particular genetic structure. If the parents, at the moment of conception, have deep and strong feelings for each other, their love will produce a powerful eruption of positive feelings, which, in turn, will increase the amplitude of the eruption. If the parents are lacking in such feelings and have only a physical attraction to each other, the eruption resulting from conception will be low in amplitude. When conception is the result of a depraved sexuality, the amplitude will be even lower. Narcotics, alcohol, nicotine and other toxins in the parents' bodies create a powerful negative field, which decreases the amplitude of eruption. When the parents are chronically under the influence of toxins, the eruption is so weak that the channel reaches only the lower astral or etheric level. In that case, a poorly developed spirit will materialize and the child will be mentally compromised. Also, poor environmental conditions result in a weakening of the parents' organism and sex cells thus decreasing the intensity of energetic eruption during conception.

The spirit that enters the fertilized ovum at conception has **a complex structure consisting of etheric, astral and mental bodies**. The zygote (fertilized egg) has **the simple structure of a unicellular organism and possesses only an etheric body** (in addition to its physical body). The qualitative structures of the spirit and zygote are so different that it is **impossible** to harmonize them. The zygote must develop to the point where the qualitative structures of both its etheric and acquired astral body permits it to harmonize with the spirit.

How is this possible? How can human embryonic cells develop through the necessary evolutionary phases? During the process of development of life on the planet, numerous species of living organisms were forced out of their ecological niches by those that could better adapt to the changing conditions (Chapters 4 and 5). The displaced species lost the opportunity to develop on the physical level of our planet, but their etheric and astral bodies still existed on the planetary etheric and lower astral levels, where they were incapable of significant development.

As described in Chapter 5, these species found several ways to accelerate their development. One was through the establishment of a symbiotic relationship with a physical embryo. Spirits at different levels of evolutionary development consecutively enter the embryonic biomass and evolve the embryo to the level where that spirit (which is genetically identical with the embryo) can harmonize with the embryo and create the appropriate physical body. **Butterflies** are the most obvious example of that process in nature. Everyone enjoys the beauty and grace of butterflies, though caterpillars often invoke opposite feelings, like revulsion. How then, does it happen, that the unsightly caterpillar gives birth to the beautiful butterfly? It is achieved through the process of metamorphosis, which is still an enigma to modern biology. Can we shed some light on its solution?

The metamorphosis of a butterfly is one of the most outstanding examples of **the symbiosis of two species in one bio-mass**. A butterfly, before its death, lays eggs, from which caterpillars hatch belonging to the class of Annelids.

Caterpillars, by consuming plants, rapidly gain biomass, which then disintegrates within the cocoon. From that biomass the butterfly's etheric body forms a physical body. Following the formation of its physical body, the butterfly leaves its pupa and the metamorphosis is complete (**Fig. 60**). Butterflies consume nectar and pollen from flowers, then, prior to death, lay their eggs, from which the caterpillars hatch. The cycle then repeats itself.

If butterflies hatched directly from eggs they would be very small and would soon die. For their growth, they need an abundance of food — nectar and pollen, which are difficult to find at that time of year. And, even if they could find the food, such minuscule creatures could not survive. Unable to fly on their own — to satisfy need or whim — they would be swept away by any passing breeze and consigned to an untimely death. Caterpillars, on the other hand, can live on blades of grass, shrubs and trees, voraciously consuming the leaves of plants and rapidly gaining the biomass required to create a butterfly.

Thus, two different species of living organisms can consecutively live in a single biomass. Such symbiosis of species permits the creatures to survive through a life cycle. There are many types of insects which similarly demonstrate the symbiosis of two distinct species, e.g., mosquitos, bees, termites, etc.

The same scenario may also be seen on other qualitative levels of evolution. In their biological development, frogs (amphibians) have two evolutionary phases — tadpole and frog. In the tadpole phase, the etheric body of a fish spirit inhabits the biomass. But the complete transformation of the biomass into a fish does not take place because the biomass has the genetics of a frog. The evolutionary development of the fish spirit within the frog biomass continues until the developing biomass attains structural and qualitative levels higher than that of the fish spirit. At this point the etheric body of the fish exits the biomass, which it has developed, and the etheric body of a frog enters. The transformation of the biomass into the image of a frog's etheric body slowly unfolds. First the front, then the rear legs begin to grow, the tail drops off, the internal organs are modified and the external appearance changes. Certainly, many scientists are aware of these phases, but no satisfactory explanation for the process has been forthcoming. Indeed, it appears to be just taken for granted. To say, as does classical biology, that, "ontogeny recapitulates phylogeny" really explains nothing at all. Our natural environment is uniquely rich with life forms and mysteries. All that we need do is look more deeply inside ourselves and into nature, and the solutions to many of its mysteries will be revealed.

Naturally, a question arising in many minds is, "Who or what is responsible for these evolutionary changes and how do they happen?"

The evolutionary development of living nature is reflected in genetics. The etheric body of the symbiosing creature and that of the biomass into which the creature enters are qualitatively identical at the moment they merge. Then, however, their speed of development differs. If the biomass has a more evolved genetics than that of the etheric body of the merging creature, they slowly move out of harmony with each other. At the culmination of this process the etheric body of the symbiosing creature

leaves the biomass to be replaced by the etheric body of a different guest creature, one that is qualitatively more in harmony with the genetic structure of the developed biomass.

At the moment of exit of the inhabiting spirit, energy erupts to form a channel that penetrates the qualitative barrier between the planetary physical and etheric spheres. The guest creature's etheric body moves via that channel from the planetary physical to the etheric level, to be replaced in the biomass by the etheric body of a creature with the same genetics as the host.

On higher levels of life's evolution, mammals and reptiles, the process is somewhat more complicated. During uterine development, mammals have several consecutive replacements of lower-level spirits within the embryonic biomass. The spirit of a creature with a low level of evolution is replaced by one with a higher level of evolutionary development. Replacement continues until the rate of evolutionary development of the guest's etheric body and that of the host's biomass are the same. During this process the physical body of the embryo resembles that of the etheric body of the guest spirit.

What is the process in **human beings**? First we should note that there are two evolutionary phases in humans — **intrauterine and extrauterine**. Later it will become clear why we need this distinction. The spirit of most humans is comprised of several spiritual bodies — etheric, astral, and one mental body. With higher levels of spiritual development there can be several more mental bodies. When the spirit has developed **four mental bodies** its **earth** cycle of evolution is complete.

As mentioned earlier, an energy channel utilized by the spirit to enter the fertilized ovum opens at the moment of conception (**Fig. 61**). The channel disappears after the spirit enters, and the qualitative barriers between the spiritual levels close (**Fig. 62**). The fertilized ovum (zygote) represents the simplest living organism. The qualitative structures of a unicellular organism and the human spirit cannot be in harmony because the structure of a human is that of a complexly organized multicellular organism.

The first thing that happens in the development of the zygote is the rapid multiplication of cells resulting in quantitative growth. This continues until the number of zygote cells reaches the minimum quantity permitting the entrance of the etheric body of a fish — a multicellular organism. Following harmonization, the etheric body of the fish begins to develop within the human biomass. This explains why a human embryo initially resembles **a fish**.

The embryonic cells of a human develop much more rapidly than the etheric body of the fish. Therefore, after approximately one month, the etheric body of the fish leaves the human embryo to be replaced by the etheric body of a species with a higher rate of development, i.e., **an amphibian**. The biomass of the embryo harmonizes with the etheric body of the amphibian, and, concomitantly, embryonic cells disintegrate, specifically those that were previously created in the image of a fish. When this occurs, large quantities of waste cells and the by-products of cellular disintegration enter the mother's bloodstream through the placenta.

This is the most vulnerable time for a miscarriage. Within the third month, for the same reasons as detailed above, the etheric body of the amphibian leaves the embryo. A new eruption takes place and the etheric body of the amphibian is replaced by that of **a reptile**.

Now the embryonic biomass harmonizes with the etheric body of the reptile: embryonic amphibian cells disintegrate, and the waste by-products are released into the mother's circulatory system. After this adjustment the human embryo resembles a reptile and its biomass rapidly gains in volume: The embryo grows from a length of one centimeter at one month of age to 9 centimeters at three months.

During the fourth month of human embryogenesis, the etheric body of the reptile leaves the embryo to be replaced by the etheric body of **a mammal**. The embryo harmonizes with the latter, and again, waste products enter the mother's bloodstream.

In the fifth month the qualitative physical and spiritual structure of the embryo permits the etheric body of **a human spirit** to harmonize with the embryo and enter it. As before, with the disintegration of embryonic tissue accompanying the release of the previous spirit, large quantities of proteinaceous waste materials enter the circulatory system of the mother.

In the sixth month of development the embryonic rudimentary tail dissolves and physically, the embryo takes on the form of the human etheric body, completing the process by the time of the actual birth of a healthy and normal child. ([Fig. 63](#)).

As noted above, it is not until the fifth month of development that the etheric body of the human spirit enters its embryo and harmonizes with it. Until then there is a qualitative barrier between the embryo and the spirit, which is bound to the embryonic biomass, but cannot enter it. The entrance of the human etheric body into the embryo and the harmonization of the two is made possible because of the consecutive transformations within the biomass of the bodies of **a fish, amphibian, reptile, and mammal, which raise the qualitative structure of the human embryo to a new level**. Thus, **human embryogenesis repeats the pattern of natural development from a unicellular organism to one that is multicellular and complex in organization**.

At the moment of conception, a human spirit bonds to the fertilized ovum and guides embryogenesis for the duration of its development inside the womb. If a miscarriage occurs (most likely at those times when the mother's organism is flooded with waste products from the disintegration of embryonic tissue) then the spirit loses the opportunity to create a new physical body for itself. An energy channel does not appear during miscarriage as it does with the death of a developed human being. Thus, **the spirit would be unable to return to the same planetary level from which it came at the moment of conception**. If it is a highly developed spirit (one with at least one mental body) it will be able to use its high potential to create an energy channel and escape to a planetary level where it can survive. In this case, however, it must give up some of its energy potential and therefore drop down to **a lower level** of spiritual development. A spirit which, developmentally, does not possess at

least one mental body is **easy prey for the creatures living on the etheric and lower astral levels**. This is a fact of life.

Astral animals consume the spiritual bodies of spirits (**Fig. 64**). **As a result the spirit dies. The destruction of the spirit means that all evolutionary experience and abilities acquired throughout all incarnations disappear forever. This is EVOLUTIONARY DEATH.**

When a person dies, his spirit moves through an energy channel to one of the Earth's levels and after some period of time it can reincarnate to create for itself a new physical body. In a new body a spirit can continue its evolution. This illustrates the qualitative distinction between the death of a physical body and the death of a spirit. There is great truth at the basis of Catholicism's belief that **abortion is the worst sin of all. It is a far more serious breach of natural law than murder. In abortion there is the greatest danger of permanent destruction of the spirit.** It is not simply a matter of removing a relatively unformed piece of physical tissue lacking any human resemblance. **It is a matter of the spirit's being deprived of the biomass that was meant to be used to create a new physical body for itself. In performing an abortion, both the woman and her physician take on heavy karma.**

Abortion ruins a woman's immune system and severely disturbs the balance of her hormonal system. Very often an abortion is the basis for future oncological disease.

Let us return to the process whereby the spirit creates a new body for itself. In order to create a physical body, the spirit must use up part of its energetic potential. When this occurs, its qualitative structure regresses to a lower level of evolution. As the child develops, however, the spirit is restored to its previous, higher level. After birth a child's physical body continues to grow and evolve. Simultaneously its spiritual bodies — etheric, astral, and mental evolve. It is, however, **impossible** for astral and mental bodies to develop normally until the spirit has reestablished its etheric body at the same level as it was at the moment of its entry into the ovum.

This can happen only if the child's brain absorbs an appropriate, minimal amount of information. Information acquired by the brain transforms the qualitative structure of its neurons, endowing it with a new capacity — **rudimentary intelligence**. In order to accomplish this a child's brain must absorb the minimum necessary amount of information during **the first three to five years** of life. This is the time when the restoration of **the etheric body** occurs. If, by that time, the neurons of the brain do not complete the evolution of their etheric bodies it will be impossible for them to begin to evolve **astral bodies**. The brain of such a person **will never obtain the ability to think** even though it may be anatomically and physiologically healthy.

Upon completion of the restoration of the etheric body, the qualitative structure of the brain's etheric structures is completed as well. If the etheric structure of the brain does not develop to a certain critical level, the **brain loses the opportunity to form and develop its astral body and later, its mental bodies**, the very existence of

which gives humans the ability to comprehend the world around them and their place in it. For this reason alone, a child, like a sponge, absorbs all information during his first four to eight years of life without any concern about its origin or significance. He starts to comprehend that information when he **begins to develop the astral bodies of his cerebral neurons**. The window for complete formation of an astral body is fourteen to eighteen years. If by that age the neurons of the brain can evolve to a mental level, then the spirit will develop and restore the mental bodies of the person as well. If, however, the astral body has not completely formed by **the age of fourteen to eighteen years, the spirit, in its present incarnation, has lost the opportunity to move to an evolutionary level higher than the one it had before entering the fertilized ovum**. In this case, **the life of this person will only produce a sterile evolution**.

Proper development leads to the formation of **mental** structures of the cerebral neurons and to the attainment of **a first mental body**. When the brain's mental structures develop to the same qualitative level as possessed by the spirit before entering the biomass, **a person will acquire previously inaccessible memories of his spirit and of previous incarnations, such as when and where he used to live, who he was, and what he did in past lives**.

With proper development in prior years, **a mental body will be completely formed by the age of thirty to thirty-three years (Fig. 65)**. If a person's development was harmonious and complete, his etheric, astral and mental bodies will create **a harmony** among themselves. That harmony creates a qualitative spurt in the development of a person's spirit. Such a person rapidly starts to evolve spiritually, and consecutively acquires **second, third, and fourth mental bodies**. The development of superior mental bodies gives an individual tremendous spiritual and mental powers, which **allow him to heal others, to profoundly influence nature, and to "see" and affect the past and future**. The power of such an individual can influence not only the fate of an individual, but even the fortunes of a nation, or civilization.

The mental power of that person can affect inorganic nature as well, modifying the weather or an ecological system within a limitless range. But, unfortunately, just a few people in the entire history of mankind managed to reach this extraordinary level of development. **Buddha, Krishna, and Jesus Christ** all had it to some degree. Unfortunately, they were misunderstood and rejected by the people of their time, only to be made into gods afterwards.

All three **left planet Earth in their physical bodies and achieved immortality**, but their knowledge and theories were distorted. Sometimes this occurred out of ignorance, sometimes there was a deliberate perversion of the essence of their message. Religious cults were created, and still exist, to worship these extraordinary individuals. But, as Jesus often cautioned: ***"Then, if any man shall say unto you, Lo, here is Christ, or there; believe it not. For there shall arise false Christs, and false proph-***

ets, and shall shew great signs and wonders; insomuch that if it were possible, they shall deceive the very elect."¹⁵

Millions of people follow the proclamations of the false prophets and cult leaders, sincerely believing in their decency. If all those people could hear these sayings from their source they would be aghast at what has become a horrible perversion of the truth.

The real teachers were called **The Great Enlighteners**. Using the power of their intellect and spirit, they penetrated the mysteries of the universe and wished to bestow all the treasures of their knowledge upon mankind. It was not their fault that people refused to accept their knowledge or perverted its essence into an opposite meaning. Let us again recall Christ: "***That seeing they may see, and not perceive; and hearing they may hear, and not understand.***"¹⁶ However, the people of that time were not in the least to blame. The distortion of truth and inability of others to correctly comprehend the knowledge of the Enlighteners have to do with the laws of the evolution of the entire civilization.

The evolution of civilization, like the evolution of the spirit, has certain stages in accordance with processes unfolding in our universe. The Great Enlighteners knew the objective laws of the cosmos, and of civilization's development. It is no accident that their eyes were full of grief and sorrow. What are those laws about and why were these great souls unable to help the people of their time? Let us try to understand it.

To do so we must return to the laws of the evolution of the spirit. The consecutive restoration of the etheric, astral and mental bodies to their level of development prior to the spirit's entry into the biomass, and their further development, depend upon the consecutive acquisition of etheric, astral, and mental structures by the neurons of the brain. Genetic imbalance, disease, and inflammatory processes of the brain and spinal fluid in infancy can compromise the development and restoration of these structures.

If the etheric structure of the neurons in a child's brain is not restored the brain will remain dormant forever, resulting in varying degrees of mental deficiency. If genetic disturbances and/or inflammatory processes are moderate there may be an incomplete restoration of the spiritual structures, with weakening and slowing of the development of the astral, and later, mental structures of the brain. We should note, that for the harmonious development of these structures, it is necessary that primary matters circulating through the spiritual bodies stay **in qualitative and quantitative balance**. **The three currents that establish this balance in normal development are:**

1. Primary matter currents which form the etheric body, the spiritual basis of the qualities **of activity and will**.

¹⁵ New Testament, Matthew, Ch.24, verses 23 and 24, King James Version.

¹⁶ New Testament, Mark, Ch.4, verse 12.

2. Primary matter currents which form the astral body, the spiritual basis of emotional states.

3. Primary matter currents which form the mental body, the spiritual basis of intelligence.

In brief, these are **the currents of Will, Heart, and Intelligence**. Their balance, forming a golden triangle, is the basis for the harmonious development of an individual's personality. A lack of the currents needed for the formation of a full etheric body will result in passivity and lack of will. A lack of the currents that form an astral body, will lead to a variety of emotional disturbances. A lack of the currents forming a mental body will lead to deficient intellectual development.

There will also be a shift in the proportions of the primary matters that determine the various aspects of intelligence and a resulting imbalance in intellectual functioning, so that instead of a healthy rounding out of the personality the individual will be skewed in his intellectual preferences and inclinations.

Thus, a balance of the currents of Will, Heart and Intellect is crucial for full development. As long as it exists, a person's entire organism, including his brain, will be well protected against external intrusion and manipulation. The average person uses approximately **three to five percent of his brain, the remainder (ninety-five to ninety-seven percent) being unavailable to him**. The remainder becomes usable only when a person moves to the evolutionary level of the highest mental planes. **This is the spirit's evolutionary reserve**. We will reveal its origin and nature in a later volume. For now, let us note that in addition to great potential benefits, the evolutionary reserve holds great dangers to man, as well. What is the nature of that danger?

When the primary matter currents of Will, Heart, and Intellect are in balance, the brain possesses **a powerful energetic protection from any external psi-influence** at any stage of its development. The relative balance of the currents may be graphed in the shape of a triangle (**Fig. 66**). It is almost impossible, or at least very difficult, to manipulate the brain of one whose currents are balanced. In order **to control a person through his psi-field, i.e., to make him a BIOROBOT, one must first disrupt the harmony of these currents**.

If one of the currents is somehow weakened, then the other two will increase proportionally and the harmony between the three will be disrupted. **This will permit an external entity to influence the unused portion of the brain's neurons (ninety-five to ninety-seven percent), thereby manipulating the subconscious, and through it, the conscious mind**. The target will not feel, see, or hear anything remarkable. **He will behave as if acting on his own free will, while in reality he is executing someone else's program, without even realizing that he is being coerced**. It is **impossible** to implement this robotization on the level of the spirit because **the etheric, astral, and mental bodies are not reactive to such stimuli**.

During the development of an organism, the physical body sustains the spiritual bodies by transforming available primary matters. Tissue disintegration on the physi-

cal level releases these matters, which are then utilized to create and evolve the etheric, astral, and mental bodies of the spirit. The physical body has antennae for absorbing primary matters directly. Humans possess **seven of these antennae, or chakras**. **This corresponds to the number of bodies one must create in order to complete the Earth cycle of evolution so that one can begin the cosmic cycle of evolution.**¹⁷

Openness of **the sexual chakra** (orange, Fig. 66) is necessary for the development of the **etheric body**, which determines a person's **physical strength** and the energy level available for all **activities**, including sex. We will call the currents for the development of the etheric body **the currents of Will**.

The solar plexus chakra (yellow) mediates the development of **the astral body**, which determines a person's **emotional make-up** and creative abilities. Let us call the currents for developing the astral body **the currents of the Heart**.

The heart chakra (green) implements the development of **a first mental body**, which determines the level of a person's **mental development** and **the scope of his intellect**. We will call the currents for developing a first mental body, **the currents of Intelligence**.

When **harmony exists between the currents of will, heart, and intelligence, i.e., harmony between the etheric, astral and first mental spiritual bodies, a person cannot be manipulated** (Fig. 66). Closing or blocking any one of the seven chakras will disrupt the spiritual harmony and evolution of etheric, astral and mental bodies in varying stages of development.

Let us think about which currents would have to be blocked, which chakra would have to be closed, in order to manipulate or robotize a person. If we close a sexual chakra the currents of Will are weakened and the etheric body will be unable to develop fully. We may wonder, "Of what value to anyone, even those with negative intention, is someone who is weak and incapable of taking action?" The answer, of course, is "None" (Fig. 67).

If we close a heart chakra the currents of Intelligence will be weakened. The result will be a physically strong, emotionally aggressive, but mentally inferior person (Fig. 68). Such a person could well prove dangerous.

If we close a solar plexus chakra, the currents of the Heart will be weakened. In this case we will have a physically strong, tough, efficiently thinking person, but one who is emotionally deficient with minimal creative abilities (Fig. 69). Such a person would be readily manipulated into becoming **a perfect biorobot**, would he not? — a person ready and eager to follow any order with the full power of his mind minus any conscience. Anyone wishing to manipulate a human being for his own selfish purposes could not ask for a more perfect puppet. Thus, **the various means of blocking the solar plexus renders man into compliant robot**. The frozen hardness of the robot is reflected in many folkloric tales depicting characters with hearts of iron, ice, or stone — e.g., "Stone Heart", "The Ice Queen", etc.

¹⁷ For more on this subject see Volume 2.

Apart from robotization, blocking the solar plexus can shrink the astral body or even stop its development. **The resulting disproportion of primary matter currents disrupts and blocks evolutionary development.** It does not matter in the least who perpetrates the robotization: their goal is to control people through their subconscious. Later on we shall return to the problem of the robotization of individuals and of the human race. For now, let us continue our study of the normal development of man and his spirit.

The cells of the physical body regenerate several times over the course of a lifetime. Different types of cells, such as blood, nerves, glands, gonads, lipids, and connective tissue, cartilage and bone have different rates of regeneration. Human blood cells are created by red and yellow marrow and are constantly being reproduced (a necessity for their functioning). Bone cells reproduce once every fifteen years. All the other cells are regenerated within intervals of less than fifteen years.

Therefore, **all the cells in a person's body are replicated every fifteen years. This means that the cellular age of a fifteen-year-old boy and of a ninety year old patriarch are THE SAME**, despite dissimilarities in their appearance. The fact of the matter is that **the aging process is a function of disharmony between the physical body and the spirit bodies**, rather than of aging of the cells. There are hundreds of theories regarding aging, but none of them provide a complete understanding of the phenomenon. By comprehending the mechanisms of aging we will come to an understanding of the possibility of **physical immortality**, the fantasy that has excited human minds for so many thousands of years.

What then, is the reason for aging? The answer is — there is a difference in the speed of evolutionary development between the physical and the various spiritual bodies. When a spirit enters a fertilized ovum, it acquires a physical body corresponding to its level of development. In creating the physical body the spirit uses up some of its energetic and evolutionary potential. This means that at the moment of birth the spirit drops down to a lower evolutionary level than it occupied at the moment of conception. The potential obtained from the spirit by the physical body permits the progressive development of the spiritual bodies through the first three decades of life. Due to different rates of evolutionary development there is, at first, a restoration of the etheric body commensurate with the level the spirit occupied at the time of its entering the ovum. Once the etheric body is restored, the restoration of the astral body begins. Once the astral body is restored, the restoration and further development of mental bodies begin. At a certain time in this process, the rate of evolutionary development of the physical, etheric, astral, and mental bodies becomes equal. A harmony is established between the various bodies, a time when the person's intelligence and creative abilities can peak. At that time the circulation of primary matters between the different bodies is maximally balanced.

The rate of evolutionary development of the spiritual bodies is faster than that of the physical body. This difference increases the longer a person lives (Fig. 65). Furthermore, the speed of development of the various spiritual bodies **is different** for each, leading, in time, to differences in their qualitative structures. When this occurs

the harmonious circulation of primary matters between bodies is disrupted. The quality and quantity of the energy flowing from the physical to the spiritual level changes.

When the differences become very large, the flow of certain kinds of primary matters to the astral and mental levels comes to an end. This process was described earlier on the cellular level in Chapter 2. (A cell with etheric, astral and mental levels is shown in Figure 28).

The etheric body of a cell is formed from a single kind of primary matter, shown in orange, the astral body from two kinds of matter, shown in orange and yellow, and the formation of the first mental body from three kinds of matter shown in orange, yellow and green.

An imbalance in the harmony of matter flow between the different levels results in insufficient quantities of matter reaching the levels necessary for the development of the astral and first mental bodies. As shown in Figure 28, only one kind of matter (shown in red) gets through to these levels and is of no value for their evolution. The nourishment of these levels is cut off, and their development comes to an end. Only the etheric body continues to develop, albeit with a weakened source of potential. **The loss of nourishment to the mental and astral levels leads to compromised thought processes and memory loss.** This is often seen in the elderly and senile as a regression to childhood behavior. The channel between the physical and etheric bodies slowly narrows and the energetic flow sustaining the evolution and life of the etheric body stops. The physical body is unable to nurture all cellular levels and **physical death follows when all the spiritual bodies have lost compatability with the physical body.**

An eruption of energy at the moment of death ruptures the individual's protective shield creating a channel through which **the spirit**, composed of the etheric, astral and mental bodies, exits the physical body (**Figs. 70 and 71**). The amplitude of that eruption depends upon the level of spiritual development reached by the individual at the moment of death. **The higher the level attained during the lifetime, the higher the planetary sphere to which one ascends after death.** If a person, through his lifetime, developed to the level of acquiring mental bodies, he goes to the mental sphere of the planet (first, second, or third mental level). If he has completed the Earthly cycle of evolution and his spirit possesses etheric, astral, and all four mental bodies, **it can penetrate all the planetary barriers, thus escaping from the planet and even the solar system. But, unfortunately, this rarely happens. The completion of the Earth cycle of evolution is only the beginning of cosmic evolution.**

In the yogic philosophy there is a concept of the spirit merging with the "Absolute," the state of Nirvana, as the highest achievable phase of spiritual evolution. But, **the state where all qualitative barriers of the Earth disappears does not signal the end of man's evolution. It only means the first cycle of development is complete and the cosmic cycle of development can now begin.** Standing on the threshold of a new, qualitatively different level of evolutionary development, should only inspire growth, not complacency and self-immobilization. We shall return to this matter later.

For now, let us explore in more detail what happens to a person at the moment of death. If, during his life he has acquired only etheric and astral bodies, after death his spirit moves to the astral plane of the planet. We should stress, however, that **the astral level, itself, has two sub-levels**. What are they?

A person, who has developed a complete astral level composed of two forms of matter (Figs. 48 and 49), will move to **the upper astral level** after his death. In Christianity this level is called “HEAVEN” (Fig. 72). Attainment of this level after death is possible only if one has not personally acquired **a heavy burden of “karma”** by perpetrating sin or negative deeds during his lifetime.

What is karma? Let us consider a striking example of a heavy karmic burden. A person, for reasons of his own, deliberately kills someone who has **not completed his full development at the time of death**. As a consequence, at death the victim’s spirit moves to a level lower than the one that it may have achieved had he lived. This is a **violation of the Law of Life**.

The killer is fully responsible for the victim’s loss. Also, in order to kill, a murderer has to become enraged enough to be capable of killing another person. When this happens, currents of negative energy move through the perpetrator’s physical, etheric, and astral bodies, flooding the astral body and **transforming** it. The astral body changes, but unfortunately for the worse. Negative emotions can feed only that part of the astral body consisting of a single kind of primary matter (the lower astral body). If the perpetrator’s astral body were composed of two kinds of primary matter (thus constituting a higher astral body), **the latter would be destroyed, because negative emotions are not compatible with the structure and quality of the higher astral body**.

Consequently, only the lower astral body develops to an extreme and hypertrophies within the person (Figs. 44 and 45). When an individual kills repeatedly, only negative lower astral currents flow through his astral body.

After death a murderer’s spirit can attain only the lower astral level of the planet. Only extinct species, such as dinosaurs and various types and classes of predators, inhabit that level (Fig. 73).

Usually such a spirit, if its protective shield is very weak or totally lacking, becomes an easy prey for astral predators. In Christianity **the lower astral level is referred to as “HELL”**, where sinners atoning for their sins, are tortured by devils, etc.

If someone commits a crime that cuts short the evolution of another, but manages to have sufficient spiritual protection for himself, astral predators will be unable to attack him (Figs. 74, 75). However, in his next incarnation the astral body of his spirit will be deformed, which will distort the development of his physical body and manifest as one or more of a variety of very grave illnesses (such as cancer), i.e. **“karmic diseases.”**

In addition, on regression to the lower astral level, the perpetrator's deformed astral body is vulnerable to the penetration of currents of primary matter.¹⁸

These currents serve as **the entrance for creatures from the lower astral sphere, which penetrate into the structures of his spirit and suck out his life energy. Astral vampires can live only upon the energy of others, therefore they do their best to keep their victims alive, but in a weakened condition.**

Very often people with negative karma have strange dreams of being hunted and fleeing from menacing creatures. What does this signify? What are these creatures? Why do they appear only in dreams? What happens to a person and his spirit when he sleeps? Let us address these questions by examining **the nature of sleep** and its functions.

The physical body of a person is the source of potential for the spirit and its evolution.

Biochemical processes, taking place inside the organism split the complex organic molecules obtained from food into simpler compounds. Through the circulation of the blood the simple compounds are utilized by all the cells of the organism, where their disintegration is completed. As a result, organic molecules disintegrate into their original primary matters, which begin to flow from the physical to the spiritual planes. The spiritual bodies accumulate their potential by absorbing primary matters corresponding to their qualitative structure. A reversal of flow of primary matters from the spiritual to the physical levels occurs when their concentration on the spiritual levels reaches saturation. **The circulation of primary matters between the physical and spiritual bodies, is, what we know as LIFE.** Simultaneously the physical body creates the necessary energetic potential for the development of the spirit and its bodies.

The developing bodies of the spirit evolve the physical body through currents of primary matters circulating down from the spiritual to the physical levels. The more dynamic that process, the heavier the burden on the physical body becomes. With the splitting of complex organic molecules, excessive amounts of toxic by-products accumulate in the organism, which if not cleared out, will kill the organism. The human organism, like that of any other life form, has its own cleansing system, consisting of a group of organs and metabolic systems. An organism can purify itself maximally only when it is no longer absorbing new amounts of poisons and toxins that are produced during metabolism.

Every organism has the capacity to neutralize and expel **a certain quantity of toxins** every day. The daily tolerable amount of neutralized poisons varies per individual, and even during one's life it continuously changes. When an organism constantly works without sufficient rest, the concentration of negative substances in-

¹⁸ The proportion of the seven primary matters are different in each spiritual body. When the organism is functioning on a low astral spiritual level it will be vulnerable to the entrance of that specific proportion of primary matters found on the low astral planetary level.

creases proportionally. When the concentration of poisons becomes higher than the organism's tolerance, "free", non-neutralized toxins begin to destroy the organism itself, rapidly rendering it non-functional.

Thus all the cells of an organism must rest in order to be relieved of toxins that accumulate during the day's activity. This occurs when a person **sleeps**, when the spirit leaves the confines of psi-field protection and travels outside the body. By drawing on the energy accumulated from the activity of the physical body, the spirit **opens up qualitative barriers between the planetary levels, then, depending upon the level of its evolutionary development and the conditions of its physical body, it can travel to the etheric, astral, or mental planetary levels**. If the spirit, for some reason, travels to a lower astral or etheric level, it becomes "prey" for predatory astral animals inhabiting these planes. It is similar to a person finding himself in a jungle swarming with crocodiles, snakes, lions, tigers and other predators for which a human is nothing but food. In the same way a spirit, moving to the lower astral level, becomes welcome fodder for astral beings.

In physical reality, an individual can extricate himself from danger by escaping in a car, taking refuge in a shelter, or using some kind of weapon. But a spirit entering the low astral plane while it travels outside the physical body during sleep can only be saved by creating an energetic shield around itself, making it difficult for astral beings to penetrate. If the spirit fails to do this, it must return to its physical body, where it has more powerful protection. Often the threatened sleeper awakens in a cold sweat, remembering a nightmare of falling into a deep, bottomless abyss. Such an abrupt return of the spirit into the physical body is **a protective reaction, saving the spirit from death**. If the spirit cannot return to its body, it will become the prey of astral predators. In that event the individual will be diagnosed as having **"died in his sleep."** People mistakenly believe that this is an easy death. But very often this kind of situation also leads not only to death of the physical body but to **death of the spirit** as well.

What is sleep? What really happens to a person's brain during sleep? The human brain possesses two operational states:

1) A state of wakefulness in which the physical body and the bodies of the spirit are in close and lively interaction. At this time the biopotentials of the brain undergo rapid change and often show wide variations in amplitude.

2) A state of sleep, in which the spirit leaves the confines of the organism's energetic protection. At this time neuronal activities markedly decrease with a slowing and diminution of amplitude of the brain biopotentials.

When a person is tired, many toxins accumulate in his body for which he requires adequate rest and sleep. When a person falls asleep, his brain cannot switch off immediately, by shifting abruptly from one operational state to another. All the systems of the brain need time to prepare for the departure of the spirit. Thus, early in the sleep cycle the brain continues working for some time with the same activity it had before the onset of sleep. After that the stage of actual falling asleep begins (**Fig. 76**). At this point the brain changes its state of functioning so that the spirit can leave

the confines of the physical body's energetic protection (psi-field). This is associated with a slowing of biophysical parameters (Stage 2, [Fig. 77](#)). When the spirit leaves, all neural processes slow down (Stage 3, [Fig. 78](#)). After the spirit has completely left the body neural activity reaches its slowest rate of activity (Stage 4, [Fig. 79](#)).

In this state the brain is not yet ready for a quick return of the spirit into its physical body. But certain situations may arise, when the spirit, escaping from astral predators, must quickly enter the body's protective psi-field. Or, when in a life-threatening situation, a person must quickly awaken himself and be prepared for action. In such cases the brain returns to its normal activity only after some period of time following the entrance of the spirit. And only someone whose brain and organism can quickly return to action escapes falling victim to either astral or earthbound predators. In modern times, except in war, it is unlikely for there to be situations where there is excessive danger from "earthly" predators, but sensitivity in sleep saves many people from astral predators.

But why does the brain not completely shut down when the spirit leaves the body? The continuing activity at this time is made possible because of evolutionary changes. After the complete departure of the spirit from the body, the muscles responsible for eye movement are periodically activated (REM sleep). Neural signals from the eyes reach the brain, activating the appropriate zones of the cerebral cortex (occipital optical zones), permitting the brain to remain minimally alert. The signals resulting from the movement of the eye muscles create a state of partial activation of the brain identical to that found when the spirit first departs from the body ([Fig. 79](#)). The physical body and brain, then, are waiting for the spirit and are alerted to quickly return to an active state ([Fig. 80](#)). During normal sleep, activation of the brain in this way occurs many times, continuously returning the brain to a state of readiness.

Before awakening, when the spirit begins its return to the body, the brain abruptly activates itself (Awakening Stage, [Fig. 81](#)). Then the brain sequentially moves through the same stages as occurred at the moment when the spirit departed, only in reverse order. When the spirit re-enters the body ([Fig. 82](#)) the individual awakens ([Fig. 83](#)).

Now let us return to another crucial issue: what happens to us at the moment of death. First, the biochemical substances circulating in the body stop moving; the activity of the cortical and sub-cortical neurons of the brain slows down, as the necessary supply of oxygen and other elements dwindles ([Fig. 84](#)). The cortical biopotentials begin to mimic the state similar to that found when a person falls asleep ([Figs. 85, 86, 87](#)). But that is where the similarity ends between states of sleep and death.

With the cessation of the biophysical processes that sustain life, the protective psi-field weakens and begins to disintegrate within the first two to three minutes after death. With the destruction of its protective field the entire potential accumulated by an organism is abruptly released, an energetic eruption ensues, creating a channel that breaks through the qualitative barriers separating the planetary planes. The spirit ascends through the channel to its appropriate level ([Figs. 88, 70, 71, 73](#)).

The following analogy will serve as an example to provide a better understanding of the process. Let us consider our planet as if it were a seven-story building. The first floor is occupied by living humans, animals and plants with physical and spiritual bodies. On the second floor dwell creatures with only an etheric body. On the third floor, creatures with an etheric and astral body. On the fourth floor, creatures with etheric, astral and first mental bodies. On the fifth floor, creatures with etheric, astral, first, and second mental bodies. On the sixth floor, creatures with an etheric, astral and three mental bodies. And on the seventh floor, creatures with an etheric, astral and all four mental bodies.

When a human, animal or plant dies and loses its physical body, it ascends to the second floor, then the third, etc., depending upon the level of development that it has reached. It cannot exceed its development by going to a higher floor (level), but it can descend to the lower levels. A departed spirit can always return to the lowest level on which it existed while in the physical state, but it must surrender some of its potential to do so. This happens, for example, if it wishes to manifest on a physical level.

After the spirit ascends to its appropriate level, cords remain, binding it to its dead physical body (**Fig. 89**). A cord connects the spirit's mental body with its physical body. During the disintegration of the neural tissue this connection is weakened and **after nine days the mental body is released from the physical body (Fig. 90)**. The process of organic decay continues and **after forty days the connection between the astral body and the physical body is broken (Fig. 91)**. After a year, when the last organic insertions into bone have decayed the connection is **finally severed between a spirit's etheric body and the remains of its dead physical body (Figs. 92 and 93)**.

Only then is **the spirit completely free from ties to the physical body**. Now it is clear why in ancient tradition relatives observe a memorial for the deceased after nine days, forty days and one year. For example, in some Asian countries and in Buddhist monasteries relatives bring the deceased to a monk for purification of the soul. A monk meditates while in the lotus position in the center of a round hall. During the meditation his spirit leaves his body and enters the body of the deceased, elevates it, and ritually circles it three times around the tranced monk's seated physical body. Then, the monk's spirit returns to its own body and the deceased is buried. It is believed that during the ritual the monk releases the mental, astral, and etheric bodies from their attachment to the physical body of the deceased.

Cremation has been practiced for centuries. During burning, all the organic tissue disintegrates and the spirit of the deceased instantly leaves its dead physical shell. Egyptians, Incas, and Guanchos from the Canary Islands embalmed their dead transforming them into mummies. According to their belief, those who preserve their dead shell shall receive immortality when God again appears on Earth. After embalmment, Egyptians placed their pharaohs and distinguished nobles in a special zone in the center of a pyramid. Within that zone, created by the shape of the pyramid, time virtually stopped. Most interesting is that the cells of mummies, when exhumed on site still

had living qualities. As soon as the mummies were removed from the zone in the pyramid, the remnants of life quickly disappeared.

Another interesting fact concerns the preservation of “sacred” monks within a complex of caves in the Kiev-Pechora monastery, located in Kiev. It is alleged that the skulls and bones of these saints, even today, continue to excrete a liquid that monks consider to be useful in healing. The chemical composition of subsoil waters has created the necessary conditions for the natural mummification of bodies, and currents of energy penetrating through the grounds of the monastery have created certain conditions by which the cells of bone remain alive and continue to excrete a secretion. In this case **the spirit stays connected to the remnants of the physical body and cannot move to other levels of the planet. As long as there is organic tissue, the spirit remains connected to its dead physical shell.**

If a person dies a violent death, **his spirit does not complete an evolutionary cycle in a physical body.** In that situation the spirit always moves to a lower level than if death were due to natural causes. When death is violent the energy eruption and channel are weak and unstable.

If a person has committed suicide, **his spirit cannot go further than the etheric planetary level**, and it often becomes food for astral and etheric animals. In some cases, **when a spirit has sufficient protection from its psi-field shield, it continues to survive among the living.** Sometimes such spirits manifest themselves in various **poltergeist** displays, a phenomenon which still remains a mystery to modern science. It is especially important to note that with suicide, if the spirit survives predation by astral beings, it drops out of the cycle of reincarnation, remaining in a “suspended” condition. Whether they know of it or not, it is for good reason that the Catholic Church considers suicide one of the most heinous sins ever committed, i.e., one bearing the heaviest negative karma.

Let us now review what happens to the physical shell after death. When the last organic compounds of a dead physical body disintegrate, **the spirit is totally free and is ready to evolve further.** When an ovum and sperm merge, an energetic channel appears, through which a spirit from the appropriate level enters the biomass, **and the sequence repeats, itself but on a different level.**

In the light of the foregoing, it is very interesting to look at the circumstances surrounding a person’s clinical death. At the moment the spirit begins to leave the body (**Fig. 94, 95, 96, 97**), it continues to see and hear everything around it. If in an operating room, the spirit may even try to explain something to the surgeons. When the spirit begins to separate from the body it does not understand why others cannot see or hear it, since it sees and hears everybody and everything. The first few minutes after death are very difficult for almost everybody, because the majority of us are absolutely unprepared for what is happening to us. With the destruction of the protective psi-field, a channel opens and sucks the individual’s spirit inside (**Fig. 98**). At this moment, the spirits of departed friends and relatives often come to help the spirit move more rapidly and easily into a new state of being. Or, sometimes, highly developed spirits from mental spheres descend to assist the transition, this “birth” to another

er level of existence. Often, in cases where individuals have later returned to life, they report seeing angels, who came to help them.

If doctors manage to return the physical body to at least minimal activity, the brain awakens to a functioning state and the energetic shell is reactivated. When the brain is reactivated it resembles the waking state (Fig. 81), except that the brain wave amplitude and frequency are larger, preparing the brain for the return of the spirit into the body (Fig. 99). The spirit re-enters the body as if awakening from sleep (Figs. 100, 101, 102) and the person returns to life.

Many people, who have experienced clinical death, remember what happened to them. They describe being in a tunnel of light and experiencing an astonishing array of emotional states. Physicians, however, give a simplistic explanation of the entire account, maintaining that, in states of oxygen starvation a person hallucinates. To this explanation the question remains — why do all people who have experienced clinical death, despite wide variations in age, race, religion and educational level, describe the absolutely same hallucination?

Furthermore, if one turns to the history of mankind and looks at the literature of every epoch and nation, there are descriptions of similar cases with the same details (for example, the legend of “Orpheus and Euridice”). Somehow these “hallucinations” are surprisingly strong and enduring through the ages! So, perhaps they are not hallucinations at all, but a genuine, (even physical) process of a spirit’s passage from one place to another. Sooner or later everybody, his wishes notwithstanding, will die and personally traverse this passage.

In most cases, if a spirit has not returned to the body within the first seven to eight minutes after death, irreversible processes take place in the organism and the complete death of the physical body follows. Only people who have experienced clinical death and recovered, can describe what happened to them. And, only when they die will all the others — the doubters who never had such experiences — realize how wrong they were for not believing, but unfortunately, it will be too late to tell the living.

Do we really need to be “non-believers?” Surely it would be more fitting and useful if we try to understand what has been revealed. And then, perhaps, as our final hour nears, the dreaded approach of death will not be the daunting prospect it is for so many, many souls!

Appendix 1. Derivation of the Formula for Species Self-Regulation

The habitat area (i.e., the area of the territory occupied by the population of a given species) can support a certain number of animals (n) without disrupting the ecological balance.

Due to a change in the environment of the habitat, fluctuations in the birth rate occasionally result in an increase in population equal to:

$$N^{(+)} = n + \beta$$

where β — equals the excessive number of individuals responsible for the imbalance in the ecological equilibrium.

Given the same death rate and the same negative factors in the external environment, the death rate increases and the number of individuals in the population approximates a negative value.

$$N^{(+)} - (\beta \pm \Delta n) \rightarrow n \quad (1)$$

where Δn — designates an insignificant deviation of the population from the optimum value.

If, however, the number of members of the population is less than optimum, then given the same natural conditions, the birth rate will increase and the population approaches optimum.

$$N^{(-)} - (p \pm \Delta n) \rightarrow n \quad (2)$$

where:

$N^{(-)}$ — is less than the optimum number of individuals in the population,

p — is the number of individuals in the species less than optimum in the population.

What, then, is the reason for such a reaction by individuals to fluctuations in their numbers?

Let us put forward a number of assumptions and analyze them. Consider the equation:

$$m_{(t)} / m_{(n)} n \rightarrow 1 \quad (3)$$

where:

$m_{(t)}$ — is the vegetative biomass growing on the habitat area in a unit of time,

$m_{(n)}$ — is the vegetative biomass necessary to support an herbivorous animal (a rabbit) at an optimum existence,

n — is the optimum density of a population for the maintenance of ecological equilibrium.

Given simple reproduction, equation (3) equals one (1).

Given extensive breeding, equation (3) is less than one (1).

Extensive breeding occurs when the vegetative biomass produced by photosynthesis has not been completely consumed by the herbivorous animals.

Equation (3) represents the system in balance. Fluctuations in the population density can be represented in the following form:

$$m_{(t)} / N^{(+)} m_{(n)} < 1 < m_{(t)} / N^{(-)} m_{(n)} \quad (4)$$

What, then, happens within the population that brings equation (4) to (the status of) equations (5) and (6)?

$$m_{(t)} / [N^{(+)} - (\beta \pm \Delta n)] m_{(n)} \rightarrow 1 \quad (5)$$

$$m_{(t)} / [N^{(-)} - (p \pm \Delta n)] m_{(n)} \rightarrow 1 \quad (6)$$

Let us now try to provide a logical explanation for this phenomenon.

Each individual in the species generates a psi-field; the psi-field generated by one individual is ω . Psi-fields generated by individuals in the population interact with one another and affect the processes occurring in their organisms. Let us assume that there is a certain optimum density of the aggregate psi-field of the population which ensures optimum conditions of existence for each individual.

$$W = \int \int_{n \ s} k(N;s) \omega ds dN \quad (7)$$

where:

W — is the aggregate psi-field of the population .

S — is the area of the population's habitat.

ω — is the psi-field generated by one individual of the species.

$k(N, s)$ — is the factor representing the mutual effect of the influence of psi-fields within a population.

Let us introduce a new parameter:

$$P_w = \int \int_{n \ s} k(N;s) \omega ds dN / \int ds = W/S \quad (8)$$

where:

P_w — is the optimum density of the aggregate psi-field per unit of surface area given an optimum population.

In the same way that we obtained equation (4) we can arrive at the following equations:

$$\int \int_{N^{(-)} \ s} k(N;s) \omega ds dN / \int ds < W/S \quad (9)$$

$$[\int \int_{N^{(+)} s} k(N;s) \omega ds dN] / \int ds > W/S$$

Writing the same equation in a somewhat changed form we obtain:

$$\begin{aligned} \int \int_{N^{(-)} s} k(N;s) \omega ds dN &< W \\ \int \int_{N^{(+)} s} k(N;s) \omega ds dN &> W \quad (9a) \end{aligned}$$

From the equation (9a) we obtain two correlations defining the movement of the population towards reinstating ecological balance.

$$\begin{aligned} \int \int_{N^{(-)} s} k(N;s) \omega ds dN &\rightarrow W \\ \int \int_{N^{(+)} s} k(N;s) \omega ds dN &\rightarrow W \quad (10) \end{aligned}$$

From the above equation we can obtain the parameter of the psi-field density change resulting from the change in the number of members of a population.

$$\Delta W^{(+)} = \int \int_{N^{(+)} s} k(N;s) \omega ds dN - \int \int_{n s} k(N;s) \omega ds dN \quad (11)$$

$$\Delta W^{(-)} = \int \int_{n s} k(N;s) \omega ds dN - \int \int_{N^{(-)} s} k(N;s) \omega ds dN \quad (12)$$

Analysis of these equation allows only the following conclusions:

- 1) Any one individual's **psi-field (ω) adversely affects** the condition and functioning of another individual's organism.
- 2) Each individual's **psi-field** also performs a **protective function**: It blocks and/or significantly diminishes the adverse impact of another individual's psi-field.
- 3) Given a balance between the number of members of a population and the ecological system as a whole, **the protective function of each individual's psi-field neutralizes the adverse effect** of other individuals' **psi-fields** in the population.
- 4) Given **an excessive density** of the population's aggregate psi-field, (**W**), the protective function of each individual's psi-field neutralizes **only a part** of the adverse impact of other individuals' psi-fields. The non-neutralized impact of psi-fields on the other individuals in the population has a **depressive effect** on each individual's organism, resulting in a decrease in the birth rate and an increase in the death rate.
- 5) Given **an insufficient density** of the aggregate psi-field of the population (**W**), part of an individual's potential, its "vital force", previously expended on gener-

ating a protective psi-field, may now be used by the organism to ensure a **maximally efficient mode** of functioning resulting in an increase in the birth rate and a longer life span.

Thus, a simple and reliable mechanism of self-regulation of the members of a population is at work for each species without which an ecological system obviously could not exist.

Appendix 2. Derivation of the Formula for Ecological Systems

Let us now take a closer look at the natural factors that affect the formation and complexity of an ecological system.

In the process of absorbing sunlight falling upon their habitat, vegetable organisms create vegetative biomass through photosynthesis. It should be noted that the more advanced vegetable organisms are capable of assimilating greater amounts of this incidental sunlight resulting in the synthesis of a greater volume of vegetative biomass per unit of time. In other words, **every type of vegetable organism has a specific Biological Efficiency Factor, BEF.**

Thus, **the volume of vegetative biomass depends on:**

- a) **the amount of sunlight striking a square unit of area per unit of time.**
- b) **the BEF of vegetable organisms.**
- c) **the number of vegetable organisms of each type.**

Translating all of the above into the language of mathematical symbols, we obtain the following equation:

$$\int \int \int_{o \ o \ o}^{s \ i \ j} Ws \chi_{(ij)} n_{(ij)} ds di dj = M^{(ij)}_p(t) \quad (1)$$

where:

$M^{ij}_p(t)$ — is the amount of vegetative biomass synthesized per unit of time by all of the vegetable organisms growing on a unit of surface.

Ws — is the amount of sunlight falling upon a unit of the planet's surface per unit of time.

$\chi_{(ij)}$ — is the BEF denoting that portion of the Ws assimilated and transformed by each plant (i) of a given species (j).

$n_{(ij)}$ — is the quantity of the vegetable organisms (i) of a given species (j) growing on a unit of surface.

Please note:

$$0 < j \leq n_{j0}$$

$$0 < i \leq n_{0i}$$

where:

n_{0i} — is the optimum quantity of plants of each species (j) on a unit of surface satisfying the requirements for ecological balance.

n_{j0} — is the quantity of vegetable species growing upon a unit of surface.

Part of the vegetative biomass is consumed by herbivorous animals. The biomass of herbivorous animals is accordingly synthesized out of this fraction, following its digestion and metabolism.

$$\int \int \int_{o \ o \ o}^{s \ a \ b} M_p^{(ij)}(t) \chi_{ab} n_{ab} ds da db = M_p^{ab}(t) \quad (2)$$

where:

$M_p^{ab}(t)$ — is the biomass of herbivorous organisms synthesized per unit of time upon a unit of surface.

χ_{ab} — is the BEF of the herbivorous animals showing that part of the consumed vegetable biomass transformed into the biomass of an herbivorous organism (a) of each species (b).

n_{ab} — is the number of herbivorous animals (a) of a given species (b) supported by a unit of surface.

Please, note:

$$0 < a < n_{ao}$$

$$0 < b < n_{ob}$$

where:

n_{ao} — is the optimum number of herbivorous animals of each species (b) living on a unit of surface satisfying the requirements of ecological balance.

n_{ob} — is the optimal quantity of species of herbivorous animals living on a unit of surface meeting the requirements for ecological balance.

Some of the herbivorous animals are devoured by carnivores. After disintegration and transformation the biomass of carnivorous animals is synthesized from herbivores.

$$\int \int \int_{o \ o \ o}^{s \ c \ g} M_p^{ab}(t) \chi_{cg} n_{cg} ds dc dg = M_p^{cg}(t) \quad (3)$$

where:

$M_p^{cg}(t)$ — is the biomass of carnivorous animals synthesized per unit of time upon a unit of surface.

χ_{cg} — is the BEF of animals showing which fraction of the consumed biomass of herbivorous animals becomes transformed into the biomass of carnivores (c) of each carnivorous species (g).

n_{cg} — is the number of carnivorous organisms (c) of a given species (g) dwelling upon a unit of surface.

It should be noted that:

$$0 < c < n_{co}$$

$$0 < g < n_{og}$$

where:

n_{co} — is the optimum density of carnivorous animals of each species (g) dwelling upon a unit of surface satisfying the requirements of ecological balance.

n_{og} — is the optimum density of carnivorous species dwelling upon a unit of surface satisfying the requirements of ecological balance.

Drawing on the mathematical symbols introduced earlier (1), (2), (3) we will now be able to represent the mathematical model of the resulting ecological system:

$$M_p^{ij}(t) + M_p^{ab}(t) + M_p^{cg}(t) = \text{const.} \quad (4)$$

After the substitution of the values of items into equation (4) we obtain:

$$M_p^{ij}(t) \left\{ 1 + \int \int \int_{ooo} \chi_{ab} n_{ab} dsdad b + \int \int \int_{ooo} \chi_{ab} n_{ab} \left[\int \int \int_{ooo} \chi_{cg} n_{cg} dsdcdg \right] dsdad b \right\} = \text{const.} \quad (5)$$

Then substituting the value $M_{ij}(t)$ into equation (5) we obtain:

$$\int \int \int_{ooo} W s_{xijn}(ij) [1 + \dots + \dots] dsdidj = \text{const.}$$

Thus we have arrived at the equation for an ecological system.

Appendix 3. List of illustrations

Download illustrations – 8,696 MB

A. Types of Foundation for Logical Thought.

Fig. 1. The logical foundation when there are possible different responses to the same information.

Fig. 2. The logical foundation of numerous intelligent races, who have correctly comprehended nature.

Fig. 3. The logical foundation of several intelligent races: characteristically it takes the form of a rectilinear structure branching into infinite distance.

Fig. 4. The natural logical foundation of humans if unchanged since birth.

Fig. 5. A theoretical model of the logical foundation used by mankind, based on binary logic.

B. Stages of Planetary Formation.

Fig. 6. The Curvature of Space.

The curvature of space creates conditions permitting the merging of two primary matters, A and B.

Fig. 6a. The Mergence of Primary Matters A and B

Primary matters **A** and **B** merge in a zone of space curvature resulting in the formation of hybrid **AB**. The new hybrid is qualitatively different from the original primary matters from which it originated. The new qualities arise from the former qualities inherent in primary matters **A** and **B**. The merging of matters occurs in that limited volume where the parameters of matters A and B are identical.

Fig. 7. The Mergence of Three Primary Matters.

Primary matters, **A**, **B**, and **C** merge within a zone of space curvature, resulting in the formation of hybrid **ABC**. The new hybrid form of matter is qualitatively distinct from its component primary matters, **A**, **B**, **C**, as well as from hybrid **AB**. The merging of primary matters here takes place within a smaller volume than when two primary matters merge because the parameters of three matters are the same only within a smaller space inside the zone of curvature.

Fig. 8. The Mergence of Four Primary Matters.

Primary matters **A**, **B**, **C**, and **D** merge in a zone of space curvature resulting in the formation of hybrid **ABCD**. Such a hybrid takes less space than hybrid **ABC** for the same reason as given above in Fig. 7.

Fig. 9. The Mergence of Five Primary Matters **A**, **B**, **C**, **D**, **E** in a zone of space curvature leading to formation of hybrid **ABCDE**.

Fig. 10. The Mergence of Six Primary Matters **A, B, C, D, E, F** in the zone of space curvature with the formation of hybrid **ABCDEF**.

Fig. 11. The Merger of Seven Primary Matters **A, B, C, D, E, F, G** in a zone of space curvature leading to formation of hybrid **ABCDEFG**.

Fig. 12. The Formation of Planet Earth: As a result of the consecutive mergence of the seven primary matters, Earth develops in a zone of space curvature consisting of six material spheres of different qualitative and quantitative composition, located within one another:

1. Physically dense sphere
2. Etheric sphere
3. Astral sphere
4. First mental sphere
5. Second mental sphere
6. Third mental sphere

Fig. 12a. Structural and Qualitative Composition of the Earth's Spheres. The chart shows the differences and similarities of the material spheres of the Earth. Mutual qualities of the different spheres create certain conditions for their interaction. The degree of interaction is denoted by a coefficient of interaction:

1. Physically dense sphere
2. Etheric sphere
3. Astral sphere
4. First mental sphere
5. Second mental sphere
6. Third mental sphere
7. Fourth mental plane, uniform (non-curved) space

α_1 — coefficient of interaction between the physically solid and the etheric spheres;

α_2 — coefficient of interaction between the physically solid and the astral sphere;

α_3 — coefficient of interaction between the physically solid and the first mental sphere;

α_4 — coefficient of interaction between the physically solid and the second mental sphere;

α_5 — coefficient of interaction between the physically solid and the third mental sphere;

α_6 — coefficient of interaction between the physically solid and the fourth mental plane, which is the zone of uniform space. In this space primary matters do not in-

ter act with each other to create new qualities or primary matters. Primary matters remain unrelated and penetrate each other without any effect.

h — a qualitative barrier between the physically dense and the etheric spheres develops as a result of qualitative and quantitative differences between the primary matters.

i — a qualitative barrier between the physically dense sphere and the astral sphere.

j — a qualitative barrier between the physically dense sphere and the first mental sphere.

k — a qualitative barrier between the physically dense sphere and the second mental sphere.

l — a qualitative barrier between the physically dense sphere and the third mental sphere.

m — a qualitative barrier between the physically dense sphere and the fourth mental plane.

Fig. 12b. Completion of the Formation of Planet Earth.

The merging of the seven primary matters created six kinds of substance that are qualitatively and quantitatively distinct within the zone of spatial curvature. These substances create six material spheres located inside one another. Their creation induces a secondary curvature of space, which neutralizes the primary curvature of space in which the primary matters originally merged. After the creation of the planet the disintegration of a certain amount of material substance occurs, releasing primary matters, which freely circulate and thus create conditions for the synthesis of new substances. The entire system is in a state of steady balance.

1. Physically dense sphere

2. Etheric sphere

3. Astral sphere

4. First mental sphere

5. Second mental sphere

6. Third mental sphere

A, B, C, D, E, F, G — Primary matters

C. The Structure of the Microcosm.

Fig. 13. Atomic Stability and Spatial Curvature.

The stability of the atoms of chemical elements depends upon the atomic weight of their nuclei. The lighter atoms have a minimum impact on their surrounding space: therefore they do not survive for very long in a “free” state. They form combinations of atoms that are more resistant to the impact of external influences.

With an increase in the nuclear atomic weight, an atom's impact on its surrounding space increases so that, among other factors, a greater external influence is necessary for them to form new combinations.

When the curvature of space attains a certain critical value, the smallest external influence will induce a change in the atom's qualitative state and disintegration of its nucleus into simpler, more stable nuclei. This is the process of radioactive disintegration.

There is a certain range of nuclear atomic weight necessary for atomic stability. The most stable elements have an atomic weight ranging from 1 to 200 a.u. (atomic units). Gold, with an atomic weight of 198 a.u. is the most stable element. It does not naturally react with other elements.

The elements with an atomic weight greater than gold are increasingly unstable, and, beginning with uranium, radioactive.

There is also electronic stability when the outer electron levels are completely filled as occurs, for example, in inert gases; elements with electronic stability do not interact with other elements to create compounds.

1. The range of atomic weight of the elements which interact with other elements to create new compounds.

2. The range of atomic weight of the elements which only weakly interact with other elements to create new compounds.

3. The lower limit of atomic weight of elements which have the maximum impact on their surrounding space, where even a minimal influence is sufficient to initiate the process of disintegration.

4. Range of the limits of the atomic weight of the radioactive elements.

5. Splashes of atoms with electronic stability.

Fig. 14. Channels between the Physical and Etheric Levels created by Inorganic Molecules and Atoms.

1. Etheric level of the planet.

2. Channel created by the hydrogen atom.

3. Channel created by the oxygen atom.

4. Channel created by the Mendelevium atom.

5. Channel created by the gold atom.

6. Channel created by the uranium atom.

Fig. 15. Channels between the Physical and Etheric Levels created by Inorganic and Organic Molecules.

1,2,3. Channels created by inorganic and simple organic molecules.

4. Boundary line beyond which the channels of the organic molecules obtain a new quality.

5. Channel between the levels created by **DNA** and **RNA** molecules.
6. Channel created by cell nuclei.

Fig. 16. The Qualitative Distinction between the Channels created by Organic and Inorganic Molecules.

1. Channels created by the inorganic molecules which do not significantly manifest any flow of primary matters from the physical to the etheric level.
2. Channels created by complex organic molecules which manifest a flow of primary matters from the physical to the etheric levels. This creates identical states of the primary matters on the physical and etheric levels.

Fig. 17. The Viral **RNA** Molecule in Different States of Hydration.

1. In the dehydrated state the virus appears as a lifeless form. The channel between the physical and etheric levels is closed.
2. When rehydrated the viral **RNA** molecule attaches OH^- — H^+ groups to free electron bonds thus creating a curvature of space sufficient for the disintegration of simple molecules and creating conditions for the primary matters resulting from that disintegration to flow to the etheric level.

D. Cell Division.

Fig. 18. The First Phase of Cell Division.

The centrioles diverge to the opposite poles of the cell and protein filaments draw the chromosomes out of the original nuclei.

1. Physically dense cell (Physical body of the cell).
2. Etheric body of the cell.
3. Nuclei of the cell.
4. Centrioles of the cell.
5. Channel of primary matter circulation between the physical and etheric levels of the cell.
6. Golgi bodies.
7. Mitochondria.
8. Endoplasmatic system.
9. Nuclear chromosomes.

Fig. 19. The Creation of Two Nuclei.

Each nucleus has a half-set of the required chromosomes.

1. Physically dense cell (Physical body of the cell).
2. Etheric body of the cell.
3. Nuclei of the cell.

4. Centrioles .
5. Nuclear channels.
7. Mitochondria.
8. Endoplasmatic system.
9. Nuclear chromosomes.

Fig. 20. Creation of a Double Set of Chromosomes.

The two nuclei inside the cell create a double set of chromosomes resulting in a supercritical state for all cellular constituents. Cellular substance disintegrates releasing its primary matters.

1. Physically dense cell (Physical body of the cell).
2. Etheric body of the cell.
3. Nuclei of the cell.
5. Nuclear channels.
7. Mitochondria .
8. Endoplasmatic system.
9. Nuclear chromosomes.

Fig. 21. Creation of a Second Etheric Body.

With the physical disintegration of the cell, the second etheric body of the cell is created. As this occurs the concentration of **G**-matter in the etheric body of the cell exceeds that on the physical level.

1. Physical level.
2. Etheric level.
3. Nuclei of the cell.
5. Nuclear channels.

Fig. 21a. Reversal of Flow of **G**-matter.

After complete disintegration of the physical body of the cell, the excess quantity of **G**-matter in the two new cells formed in the etheric body begins to flow through the same channels from the etheric to the physical level.

1. Physical level.
2. Etheric level.
3. Nuclei of the etheric bodies of the cell.
5. Nuclear channels.

Fig. 22. Projection of the Form of the Etheric to the Physical Body.

Two cellular etheric bodies serve as templates for the synthesis of two new physical cells. The form of the template is projected via the reverse flow of **G**-matter

from the etheric to the physical levels, where it organizes the biomass remaining after disintegration of the cellular physical substance.

1. Physical level.
2. Etheric body of the cell.
3. Nuclei of the etheric bodies of the cell.
4. Centrioles .
5. Nuclear channels.
6. Golgi body.
7. Mitochondria .
8. Endoplasmatic system.

Fig. 23. The Creation of Two New Physical Cells.

Two new physically solid cells are synthesized from two etheric templates. Each cell is an exact replica of the cell prior to its division.

1. Physically solid cell (Physical body of the cell).
2. Etheric body of the cell.
3. Nuclei of the cell.
4. Centrioles of the cell.
5. Channels of the cell.
6. Golgi apparatus.
7. Mitochondria.
8. Endoplasmatic system.

Fig. 24. Green Euglena.

This organism functions as a vegetable organism in daylight and as an animal in the dark.

Fig. 25. Volvox.

Volvox is a transitional form between monocellular and multicellular organisms.

E. The Evolution of the cell.

In the evolution of multicellular organisms cellular differentiation takes place resulting in structural changes and the acquisition of new qualities. This permits a greater impact of the cell on its spatial curvature with the associated possibility of opening new barriers.

Fig. 26. Cell with Lower Astral Body.

The opening of a qualitative channel between the physical and astral levels of the cell is necessary for the formation of the lower astral body.

1. Physically solid cell (Physical body of the cell).
2. Etheric body of the cell.
3. The lower astral body of the cell forms from one primary matter, **G**-matter.

V1 — evolutionary activity of the cell's physical body

V2 — evolutionary activity of the cell's etheric body

V3 — evolutionary activity of the cell's astral body

Fig. 27. Cell with Complete Astral Body.

A cell with physical, etheric, and complete astral bodies, the last formed out of two primary matters, **G** and **F**.

1. Physically solid cell (Physical body of the cell).
2. Etheric body of the cell.
3. Full astral body of the cell.

V1 — evolutionary activity of the cell's physical body.

V2 — evolutionary activity of the cell's etheric body.

V3 — evolutionary activity of the cell's astral body.

Fig. 28. Cell with a First Mental Body.

A cell containing physical, etheric, astral, and first mental bodies in a state of harmony between all levels.

1. Physically solid cell (Physical body of the cell).
2. Etheric body of the cell.
3. Astral body of the cell .
4. First mental body of the cell.

V1 — evolutionary activity of the cell's physical body.

V2 — evolutionary activity of the cell's etheric body.

V3 — evolutionary activity of the cell's astral body.

V4 — evolutionary activity of the cell's first mental body.

Fig. 29. The First Stage of Loss of Integrity of the Physical Body.

Discontinuation of the circulation of primary matters between the astral and first mental bodies results in the beginning loss of integrity of the physical body.

1. Physically solid cell (Physical body of the cell).
2. Etheric body of the cell.
3. Astral body of the cell.
4. First mental body of the cell.

V1 — evolutionary activity of the cell's physical body.

V2 — evolutionary activity of the cell's etheric body.

V3 — evolutionary activity of the cell's astral body.

V4 — evolutionary activity of the cell's first mental body.

(Note loss of circulation of primary matter between the astral and first mental body).

Fig. 30. Second Stage of Loss of Integrity of the Physical Body.

Further decrease in the circulation of primary matters between the astral and the etheric levels results in a progressive loss of integrity of the constituents of the physical body.

1. Physical body of the cell.
2. Etheric body of the cell.
3. Astral body of the cell .
4. First mental body of the cell.

V1 — evolutionary activity of the cell's physical body.

V2 — evolutionary activity of the cell's etheric body.

V3 — evolutionary activity of the cell's astral body.

V4 — evolutionary activity of the cell's first mental body.

Fig. 31. The Final Stage in the Death of the Physical Body.

When the circulation of primary matters between the etheric and physical levels completely stops the physical body dies.

1. Physical body of the cell.
2. Etheric body of the cell.
3. Astral body of the cell.
4. First mental body of the cell.

V1, V2, V3, V4 — evolutionary speeds of physical, etheric, astral, and first mental bodies of the cell. (Note that $V1 = 0$).

Fig. 32. The First Stage of Cellular Disintegration.

All primary matters begin to stop circulating between the cell's physical and spiritual levels. Note the loss of circulating **G**-matter between the astral and first mental bodies.

1. Physical body of the cell.
2. Etheric body of the cell.
3. Astral body of the cell.
4. First mental body of the cell.

V1, V2, V3, V4 — evolutionary speeds of physical, etheric, astral, and first mental bodies of the cell (Note reversal of V1).

Fig. 33. Cellular Disintegration Continues.

This is marked by the gradual death of the nucleus with closure of the nuclear channel.

1. Physical body.
2. Etheric body.
3. Astral body.
4. First mental body.

Fig. 34. Complete Disintegration of the Cell.

Only fragments of organic molecules remain on the physical level.

1. Physical body.
2. Etheric body.
3. Astral body.
4. First mental body.

V1, V2, V3, V4 — Evolutionary speeds of the physical, etheric, astral, and first mental bodies of the cell.

F. Psi-Fields of living Organisms.

Fig. 35. Psi-field Generated by One Termite.

Psi-field generated by one termite on a limited living space, **S**.

1. Termite.
2. Psi-field generated by one termite.

S — the limits of the living space

Fig. 36. Psi-fields Generated by Two Termites.

Psi-fields generated by two termites on a limited living space, **S**.

1. Termite.
2. Psi-field generated by two termites.

S — the limits of the living space.

Fig. 37. Deformation of the Psi-fields of Termites.

Deformation of the psi-fields of termites living on a limited space when the concentration of the termite population, **N⁻**, is below a critical number.

1. Termite.
2. Psi-field generated by one termite.

S –the limits of the living space.

Fig. 38. Merging of the Psi-fields of Individual Termites.

The merging of the psi-fields of individual termites into a unified psi-field colony when the concentration of the number of termites, N^+ , exceeds a critical limit.

1. Termite.
2. Psi-field of the termite.
3. The limits of the living space.

Fig. 39. Psi-field of Rabbits in Low Density Populations.

The structure of the psi-field of rabbits when their population density, N^- , on the area, **S**, is less then critical.

1. Rabbit.
2. Psi-field of the rabbit.

S — Rabbits' living space.

Fig. 40. Psi-field of Rabbits in High Density Populations.

The structure of the psi-field of rabbits when their population density, N^+ , on the area, **S**, exceeds a critical number.

1. Rabbit.
2. Psi-field of the rabbit.

S — Rabbits' living space.

Fig. 41. The Psi-field of Migrating Birds.

The psi-field state of migrating birds (ducks) depends upon the season. During spring and summer the psi-fields of individuals of the species constitute a closed system.

1. Duck.
2. Psi-field of the duck.

Fig. 42. The Impact of Environmental Changes on the Psi-field.

The impact of seasonal environmental changes on the psi-field, such as temperature, daylight, etc. on the structure of the psi-field. The psi-field of the species shifts from a closed to an open state, encompassing, in this illustration, two ducks.

1. Duck.
2. Shared psi-field of the ducks.

Fig. 43. Unified Psi-fields in Critical Conditions.

The psi-field of each individual unites into a mutually shared global psi-field when environmental conditions for the specific species become critical.

1. Duck.

2. Psi-field of the bird flock.
3. Living area of the species during the summer.
4. Living area of the species during the winter season.
5. Bird migration.

G. Stages of Evolutionary Development of the Human Spirit.

Fig. 44. The Development of the Human Etheric body.

The conditions for the formation and development of the astral body are dependent upon completion of the development of the etheric body.

1. Physical body.
2. Etheric body.

3,4,5,6,7 — The spiritual bodies that could be potentially developed by a human being during a complete cycle of his spiritual evolution on the planet. (Usually this takes many reincarnations).

h, i, j, k, l, m — qualitative barriers between the physical, etheric, astral, and first, second, third, and fourth mental levels.

Fig. 45. The Qualitative Structure of the Human Body Following Completion of the Development of the Etheric Body.

1. Structure of the physical body.
2. Structure of the etheric body.
3. **h, i, j, k, l, m** — qualitative barriers.

4. **$\alpha_1; \alpha_2; \alpha_3; \alpha_4; \alpha_5; \alpha_6$** ; — coefficients of interaction between the spiritual planes of Earth.

Fig. 46. The Development of the Human Lower Astral body.

The conditions for the formation and development of the higher astral body are dependent upon completion of the development of the lower astral body.

1. Physical body.
2. Etheric body.
3. Lower astral body.

4; 5; 6; 7 — the spiritual bodies that could be potentially developed by a human being during a complete cycle of his spiritual evolution on the planet.

h; i; j; k; l; m — qualitative barriers between the planetary levels.

Fig. 47. Qualitative Structure of the Human Body consisting of Etheric and Lower Astral Bodies of the Spirit.

1. Physical body.

2. Etheric body.

3. Lower astral body.

h; i; j; k; l; m — qualitative barriers between the planetary levels.

α_1 ; α_2 ; α_3 ; α_4 ; α_5 ; α_6 ; — coefficients of interaction between the levels.

Fig. 48. Evolution and Development of the Complete Astral Body.

The conditions for the formation and development of the first mental body are dependent upon completion of the development of the higher astral body.

1. Physical body.

2. Etheric body.

3. Higher astral body (complete astral body).

h; i; j; k; l; m — qualitative barriers between the planetary levels.

4; 5; 6; 7 — the spiritual bodies that could be potentially developed by a human being during a complete cycle of his spiritual evolution on the planet.

Fig. 49. Qualitative Structure of the Human Body: The Etheric and Complete Astral Bodies of the Spirit.

1. Structure of the physical body.

2. Structure of the etheric body.

3. Structure of the full astral body.

h; i; j; k; l; m — qualitative barriers.

α_1 ; α_2 ; α_3 ; α_4 ; α_5 ; α_6 ; — coefficients of interaction between the levels.

Fig. 50. Evolution and Development of the First Mental Body.

The conditions for the evolution and development of the first mental body depend upon the completion of development of the higher astral body.

1. Physical body.

2. Etheric body.

3. Astral body.

4. First mental body.

5; 6; 7 — the spiritual bodies that could be potentially developed by a human being during a complete cycle of his spiritual evolution on the planet.

h; i; j; k; l; m — qualitative barriers between the levels.

Fig. 51. Qualitative Structure of the Human Spiritual Bodies: The Etheric, Complete Astral, and First Mental Bodies of the Spirit.

1. Structure of the physical body.

2. Structure of the etheric body.

3. Structure of the complete astral body.
4. Structure of the first mental body.

h; i; j; k; l; m — qualitative barriers.

$\alpha_1; \alpha_2; \alpha_3; \alpha_4; \alpha_5; \alpha_6$; — coefficients of interaction between the levels.

Fig. 52. The Development of the Second Mental Body.

The completion of development of the second mental body is necessary for the evolution and development of the third mental body.

1. Physical body.
2. Etheric body.
3. Astral body.
4. First mental body.
5. Second mental body.

6, 7. — the spiritual bodies that could be potentially developed by a human being during a complete cycle of his spiritual evolution on the planet.

h; i; j; k; l; m — qualitative barriers between the levels.

Fig. 53. Qualitative Structure of the Human Spiritual Body: The Etheric, Complete Astral, and First and Second Mental bodies of the Spirit.

1. Structure of the physical body.
2. Structure of the etheric body.
3. Structure of the complete astral body.
4. Structure of the first mental body.
5. Structure of the second mental body.

h; i; j; k; l; m — qualitative barriers.

$\alpha_1; \alpha_2; \alpha_3; \alpha_4; \alpha_5; \alpha_6$; — coefficients of interaction between the levels.

Fig. 54. The Evolution and Development of the Third Mental Body.

The completion of development of the third mental body is necessary for the evolution and development of the fourth mental body.

1. Physical body.
2. Etheric body.
3. Astral body.
4. First mental body.
5. Second mental body.
6. Third mental body.

7. The spiritual bodies that could be potentially developed by a human being during a complete cycle of his spiritual evolution on the planet.

h; i; j; k; l; m — qualitative barriers between the levels.

Fig. 55. The Qualitative Structure of the Human Spiritual Bodies: the Etheric, Complete Astral, and First, Second and Third Mental Bodies of the Spirit.

1. Structure of the physical body.
2. Structure of the etheric body.
3. Structure of the complete astral body.
4. Structure of the first mental body.
5. Structure of the second mental body.
6. Structure of the third mental body.

h; i; j; k; l; m — qualitative barriers.

α_1 ; α_2 ; α_3 ; α_4 ; α_5 ; α_6 ; — coefficients of interaction between the levels

Fig. 56. The Evolution and Development of the Fourth Mental Body.

After completion of the development of the fourth mental body the spirit is capable of continuing its evolution in the cosmos beyond the constraints of the Earth and its spiritual spheres.

1. Physical body.
2. Etheric body.
3. Astral body.
4. First mental body.
5. Second mental body.
6. Third mental body.
7. Fourth mental body.

h; i; j; k; l; m — qualitative barriers between the levels.

Fig. 57. The Qualitative Structure of Human Spiritual Bodies after Completion of the Planetary Cycle of Development.

1. Structure of the physical body.
2. Structure of the etheric body.
3. Structure of the complete astral body.
4. Structure of the first mental body.
5. Structure of the second mental body.
6. Structure of the third mental body.
7. Structure of the fourth mental body.

h; i; j; k; l; m — qualitative barriers.

α_1 ; α_2 ; α_3 ; α_4 ; α_5 ; α_6 ; — coefficients of interaction between the levels.

Fig. 58. The Spirits of Evolving Organisms on the Planetary Spheres: Their location depends upon their level of evolutionary development.

1. Physical sphere.
2. Etheric sphere.
3. Astral sphere.
4. First mental sphere.
5. Second mental sphere.
6. Third mental sphere.

Fig. 59. The Spirits of Spiritually Evolving Deceased and Extinct Organisms on the Planetary Spheres: Their location depends upon their level of evolutionary development.

1. Physical sphere.

1n; 1p; 1g; 1r; 1s; 1v; 1u — various living organisms inhabit the physical level.

2. Etheric sphere.

2n; 2p; 2g; 2g'; 2r; 2s; 2s' — spirits of spiritually evolving extinct and deceased animals, living on the planetary etheric plane.

3. Astral sphere with two levels — lower and higher astral.

3s; 3s'; 3u; 3v; 3v' — spirits of spiritually evolving extinct and deceased animals, living on the planetary astral plane.

4. First mental sphere with three intermediate levels.

4v — spirits of spiritually evolving, deceased organisms occupying the first mental plane of the planet.

h; i; j; k — qualitative barriers.

H. Symbiosis in Evolution.

Fig. 60. Symbiosis in the Development of the Butterfly.

The consecutive entrance of two different spirits into one biomass, each providing developmental changes in the biomass. The entrance and functioning of the first spirit is dependent upon the developmental effects on the biomass of the spirit that precedes it.

1. Butterfly egg.

2; 2a; 2b — stages of caterpillar evolution.

- 2'. Spirit of the caterpillar.

3; 3a; 3b — stages of the chrysalis.

4. Butterfly.

4'. Spirit of the butterfly.

A — moment of entry of the spirit of the caterpillar.

B — moment of entry of the spirit of the butterfly.

h — qualitative barrier.

H. Intrauterine and Extrauterine Stages in the Evolution of the Spirit.

Fig. 61. Entry of the Human Spirit into the Human Fertilized Ovum during Conception.

The fusion of ovum and spermatozoon result in an eruption of energy that creates a channel opening qualitative barriers between planetary levels. The human spirit enters the ovum through this channel.

1n; 1p; 1g; 1r; 1s; 1v; 1u — variety of living organisms existing on the physical level.

2n; 2p; 2g; 2g'; 2r; 2s; 2s' — spirits of spiritually evolving extinct and dead animals, living on the etheric plane of the planet.

3s; 3s'; 3u; 3v; 3v' — spirits of spiritually evolving extinct and dead animals living on the astral plane of the planet.

4v — spirits of evolving former living organisms occupying the first mental plane of the planet.

h; i; j; k — qualitative barriers.

Fig. 62. Binding of the Spirit to the Ovum.

The qualitative barriers close after the spirit enters the body and binds to the developing zygote. The stage of development of a new physical body begins.

1n; 1p; 1g; 1r; 1s; 1v; 1u — variety of organisms living on the physical level.

2n; 2p; 2g; 2g'; 2r; 2s; 2s' — spirits of spiritually evolving extinct and deceased animals, living on the etheric plane of the planet.

3s; 3s'; 3u; 3v; 3v' — spirits of spiritually evolving extinct and deceased animals living on the astral plane of the planet.

4v — spirits of evolving deceased organisms occupying the first mental plane of the planet.

h; i; j; k — qualitative barriers.

Fig. 63. Intrauterine Period of Human Development.

J₀ — level of evolutionary development of invertebrate animals.

J₁ — level of evolutionary development of fish.

J₂ — level of evolutionary development of amphibians.

J₃ — level of evolutionary development of reptiles.

J₄ — level of evolutionary development of mammals.

J₅ — level of evolutionary development of humans.

t₁ — Moment of entry of a fish spirit into the developing embryo.

t₂ — moment of exit of the fish spirit from the embryo and entry of an amphibian spirit.

t₃ — moment of exit of the amphibian spirit from the embryo and the entry of a reptile spirit.

t₄ — moment of exit of the reptile spirit from the embryo and the entry of a mammal spirit.

t₅ — moment of exit of the mammal spirit from the embryo and the entry of a human spirit.

φ₁ — the interval of the qualitative development of the human embryo when the spirit of a fish is present in the human embryo.

φ₂ — the interval of the qualitative development of the human embryo when the spirit of an amphibian is present in human embryo.

φ₃ — the interval of the qualitative development of the human embryo when the spirit of a reptile is present in the human embryo.

φ₄ — the interval of the qualitative development of the human embryo when the spirit of a mammal is present in the human embryo.

φ₅ — the level of qualitative development of the human embryo when the human spirit enters the embryo.

Fig. 64. Ejection of the Spirit from the Embryo during Abortion.

The energy eruption is only sufficient to open a channel to the etheric and lower astral levels. A spirit lacking strong protection becomes prey to astral animals. Most often abortion results in the death of the spirit. (Notations for Fig. 64 are the same as for Fig. 61).

Fig. 65. Post-natal Development of the Body by the Spirit.

Following birth the spirit continues to develop its physical body and simultaneously the organism restores and further develops its spiritual bodies. This process can be positive or negative. The physical body may be unable to support vital functions due to negative internal and external factors. This can result in the spirit's leaving a dead and useless physical body.

1. Physical body.
2. Etheric body.
3. Astral body.

4. First mental body.

J₁ — level of evolutionary development of the spirit's physical body before the entry of the spirit at conception.

J₂ — level of evolutionary development of the spirit's etheric body before the entry of the spirit at conception.

J₃ — level of evolutionary development of the spirit's astral body before the entry of the spirit at conception.

J₄ — level of evolutionary development of the spirit's first mental body before the entry of the spirit at conception.

J₂' — level of evolutionary development of the spirit's etheric body upon departure of the spirit at the moment of death.

J₃' — level of evolutionary development of the spirit's astral body upon departure of the spirit at the moment of death.

J₄' — Level of evolutionary development of the spirit's first mental body upon the departure of the spirit at the moment of death.

Δτ₁ — the time interval of the upper limit in years for the window of time in which the etheric body is able to develop.

Δτ₂ — the time interval of the upper limit in years for the window of time in which the astral body is able to develop.

Δτ₃ — the time interval of the upper limit, when the first mental body is able to develop.

J. Harmonious Conditions for the Development of the Human Spirit.

Fig. 66. Normal Balance of Flow of Primary Matters.

The flow of primary matters through the spiritual bodies are in balance when development is normal.

1. Physical body.

2. Etheric body.

3. Astral body.

4. First mental body.

h; i; j — qualitative barriers between the levels.

Fig. 67. Balance of Primary Matters in Etheric Body Blockage.

The astral and first mental bodies do not develop when there is blockage or interference in the development of the etheric body. The flow of primary matters through the spiritual bodies is unbalanced.

1. Physical body.

2. Etheric body.
3. Astral body.
4. First mental body.

h; i; j — qualitative barriers between the levels.

Fig. 68. Balance of Primary Matters in First Mental Body Blockage.

In the case of interference or blockage in the first mental body intelligence does not develop. The flow of primary matters through the spiritual bodies is unbalanced.

1. Physical body.
2. Etheric body.
3. Astral body.
4. First mental body.

h; i; j — qualitative barriers between the levels.

Fig. 69. Balance of Primary Matters in Astral Body Blockage.

When there is interference or blockage in the development of the astral body, the human higher astral body does not develop. The consequent over-development of the lower astral body leads to a deficiency of the higher emotions and excessive display of the lower emotions, such as jealousy, greed, selfishness, sadism, pornography, etc.

1. Physical body.
2. Etheric body.
3. Astral body.
4. First mental body.

h; i; j — qualitative barriers between the levels.

K. Death of the Physical Body.

Fig. 70. Creation of a Channel.

At the moment of death, energy erupts from the body creating a channel for the spirit to leave the body and move to its appropriate planetary plane (Notation as in Fig. 61).

Fig. 71. Opening of Barriers between Levels.

The qualitative barriers between planetary planes opens to a level equal to the limit of development of the spirit while in the physical body (Notation as in Fig. 61).

Fig. 72. The Barriers Close.

The channel disappears in approximately two minutes, all the barriers close, and the spirit remains attached to the dead physical body only by a thin cord of red primary matter (Notation as in Fig. 61).

Fig. 73. Where there is only a low level of spiritual development the channel reaches only the lower astral level.

Fig. 74. The Channel Disappears.

The channel connecting the spirit with the dead physical body disappears completely only after all traces of organic substance in the human skeleton completely vanish (Notation as in Fig. 61).

Fig. 75. Consumption of the Human Spirit.

Without a protective shield a human spirit in the lower astral level will be surrounded and consumed by astral animals. In such an event that human spirit disappears forever (Notation as in Fig. 61).

L. Stages of Human Sleep.

Fig. 76. First Stage of Sleep: begins when the brain starts to adjust its cycle of operations to a state in which the spirit can move outside the confines of the physical body.

1. Physical body.
2. Protective shield.

A, G, F...etc. — primary matters flowing through specific chakras.

Fig. 77. Second Stage of Sleep: The brain continues to adjust its cycle of operations making it possible for the spirit to leave the body (beginning of the dislocation).

1. Physical body.
2. Spirit.
3. Protective shield.

Fig. 78. Third Stage of Sleep: The spirit leaves the body completely. A cord maintains the connection between the physical body and the spirit so that they remain attached during the entire period of sleep.

1. Physical body.
2. Spirit.
3. Protective shield.
- 3*. Protective shield of the spirit.
4. Cord linking the physical body and the spirit.

Fig. 79. Fourth Stage of Sleep: The brain is completely adjusted to the spirit's being entirely out of the body.

1. Physical body.
2. Spirit.
3. Protective shield.

3.* Protective shield of the spirit.

4. Cord linking the physical body and the spirit.

Fig. 80. Stage of Deep Sleep: The brain remains in a standby state. Periodic eruptions of brain activity prevent the brain from completely switching off.

1. Physical body.

2. Spirit.

3. Protective shield.

3*. Protective shield of the spirit.

4. Cord linking the physical body and the spirit.

Fig. 81. Stage of Awakening: Powerful impulses activate the brain and establish conditions for the spirit to re-enter the physical body.

1. Physical body.

2. Spirit.

3. Protective shield.

3* Protective shield of the spirit.

4. Cord linking the physical body and the spirit.

Fig. 82. Re-entry of the Spirit: The brain generates signals that open the protective shield of the physical body and permits the spirit to re-enter its physical body.

1. Physical body.

2. Spirit.

3. Protective field.

Fig. 83. Spirit and Body Unified: At the moment of awakening all brain processes return to their initial state in which the spirit and the body function as a unified system.

1. Physical body.

2. Spirit.

M. The Stages of Death.

Fig. 84. The Initial Stage of Death: The supply of vital substances for the brain diminishes.

1. Physical body.

2. Spirit.

Fig. 85. The Spirit Begins to Leave the Body: The deficiency of vital substances makes the brain switch to a state of minimal activity similar to that found in sleep. At the same time the spirit begins to separate from the body.

1. Physical body.
2. Spirit.
3. Protective shield.

Fig. 86. Departure of the Spirit: The brain moves to a lower level of activity after all its reserves are depleted. Now the body's protective shield starts disintegrating. The spirit continues to separate from the body.

1. Physical body.
2. Spirit.
3. Protective shield.
- 3* Protective shield (psi-field) of the spirit.
4. Cord connecting physical body and the spirit.

Fig. 87. Complete Departure of the Spirit: The protective shield of the body continues to disintegrate. The spirit completely separates from the body.

1. Physical body.
2. Spirit.
3. Protective shield.
- 3*. Protective shield of the spirit.
4. Cord linking the physical body and the spirit.

Fig. 88. The Channel at Death: The destruction of the physical protective shield releases an eruption of energy which opens a channel through which the spirit can travel to other planetary planes.

1. Physical body.
2. Spirit.
3. Protective shield.
- 3* Protective shield of the spirit.
4. Cord linking the physical body and the spirit.
5. Channel used by the spirit to travel to other planetary planes.

Fig. 89. Three Sub-Channels.

The first cells to die in the physical organism are the cerebral neurons. The channel linking the spirit to the dead physical body consists of three sub-channels or cords linking the physical body to the etheric, astral, and first mental bodies.

1. Physical body.
2. Etheric body.
3. Astral body.
4. First mental body.

5. Cord connecting the dead physical body to the etheric body.
- 5*. Cord connecting the dead physical body to the astral body.
- 5**. Cord connecting the dead physical body to the first mental body.

Fig. 90. The cord between the physical body and the first mental body breaks nine days after disintegration of the physical body.

1. Physical body.
2. Etheric body.
3. Astral body.
4. First mental body.
5. Cord connecting the dead physical body to the etheric body.
- 5*. Cord connecting the dead physical body to the astral body.

Fig. 91. The cord between the physical body and the astral body breaks forty days after disintegration of the physical body.

1. Physical body.
2. Etheric body.
3. Astral body.
4. First mental body.
5. Cord connecting the dead physical body to the etheric body.

Fig. 92. The disintegration of organic substances continues.

1. Human skeleton.
2. Etheric body.
3. Astral body.
4. First mental body.
5. Cord connecting human skeleton to the etheric body.

Fig. 93. The Last Cord Breaks.

After one year all organic substances carrying information about the dead person and his spirit have disintegrated into inorganic substances. The cord connecting the remains of the human to the etheric body breaks.

1. Human skeleton.
2. Etheric body.
3. Astral body.
4. First mental body.

N. The Stages of Clinical Death.

Fig. 94. First Stage.

Clinical death is initiated by a cessation to the brain of the supply of vital substances necessary to sustain the life of the cerebral neurons.

1. Physical body.
2. Protective shield of the physical body.

Fig. 95. Second Stage: The Spirit Begins to Separate from the Body. The deficiency of vital substances makes the brain switch to a state of minimal activity that is similar to the state of sleep. At the same time the spirit begins to leave the body.

1. Physical body.
2. Spirit.
3. Protective shield of the physical body.
- 3*. Protective shield of the spirit.

Fig. 96. Third Stage: The Further Separation of the Spirit from the Body. The brain shifts to a lower level of activity after all its reserves are used up. The body's protective shield starts to disintegrate.

1. Physical body.
2. Spirit.
3. Protective shield of the physical body.
- 3* Protective shield (psi-field) of the spirit.
4. Cord linking physical body and the spirit.

Fig. 97. Fourth Stage: Complete Departure of the Spirit.

The spirit has completely left the body and the protective shield of the body continues to disintegrate.

1. Physical body.
2. Spirit.
3. Protective shield of the physical body.
- 3* Protective shield of the spirit.
4. Cord linking physical body and the spirit.

Fig. 98. Fifth Stage: Loss of the Shield.

The spirit has completely left the body and the protective shield of the body completely disintegrates.

1. Physical body.
2. Spirit.
3. Protective shield of the physical body.
- 3*. Protective shield of the spirit.

4. Cord connecting the physical body and the spirit.
5. Channel utilized by the spirit to move to planetary levels.

t₁ — moment of origin of the channel that opens qualitative barriers.

t₂ — Period of time from the start of clinical death; until **t₂** most cerebral neurons are still alive.

Fig. 99. Restoration of Brain Activity.

When the cortex again starts receiving necessary vital substances the brain begins to recover its normal activity. This creates conditions for the spirit to return to the physical body and for the restoration of its protective shield.

1. Physical body.
2. Spirit.
3. Protective shield of the physical body.
4. Cord connecting the physical body and the spirit.
5. Channel used by the spirit to return to the physical body.

t₁ — moment of the spirit's entry into the channel of transit.

t₂ — moment of the spirit's return through the channel of transit to the physical body.

Fig. 100. Restoration of the Shield.

The protective shield around the physical body becomes restored as soon as the activity of the brain returns to normal.

1. Physical body.
2. Spirit.
3. Protective shield of the physical body.
- 3* Protective shield of the spirit.
4. Cord connecting the physical body and the spirit.

Fig. 101. The Spirit Returns to its Physical Body.

1. Physical body.
2. Spirit.
3. Protective shield of the physical body.
- 3*. Protective shield of the spirit.

Fig. 102. Emergence from Clinical Death.

The functions of the entire organism, including the brain, have returned to a normal state. The individual emerges from the state of clinical death.

1. Physical body.

- 2. Spirit.
- 3. Protective shield of the physical body.
- 3*. Protective shield of the spirit.

[Download illustrations – 8,696 MB](#)

The Final Appeal to Mankind

Volume 2

Chapter 1. The evolutionary history of mankind.

Chapter 2. The etiology and mechanisms of disease in humans

Chapter 3. The effect of the spirit on the human organism and psyche.

Chapter 4. The unity of the microcosmic and macrocosmic laws of the universe.

Chapter 5. Matrix Space: formation of Super-Spaces.

Chapter 6. Matrix Space systems.

Appendix 1. Derivation of the formula for Matrix Space systems.

Appendix 2. Exercises with one's own psi-field.

Appendix 3. List of illustrations.

www.levashov.org

www.levashov.info

www.levashov.name

Other author's books

Spirit and Mind. Vol 1

The Universe plays the eternal game of "numbers". Primary matters merge, galaxies, stars and planets are born or liberated during nuclear or annihilation processes, emitting a huge amount of "energy" which depends on the value of the exact parameters described as "dimensionality" or "gradients of dimensionality"... Strictly consecutive at any level of our reality, these concepts cross borders of different branches of knowledge and are universally applied to everything, revealing secrets of nature – beginning with what occurs inside of a tunnel of the DNA molecule and finishing with the birth of a star; from the origin of life – up to the evolution of the human spirit; from splitting atoms of transuranium elements – up to the appearance of consciousness and human emotions...

The book contains 100 high-quality author's illustration.

Spirit and Mind. Vol 2

The nature of memory becomes absolutely real and tangible – a mystic aura around it vanishes giving the opportunity to everyone to comprehend and estimate this wonderful and very simple phenomenon of nature. On the basis of the same theory, which explains the nature of memory, the author gives us a possibility to get into the secret of the nature of consciousness. He explains, for example, why the critical amount of information absorbed by the human brain during a limited time becomes a crucial requirement for the origin of intellect. The author "strains" our grey cells and gradually leads us to the understanding of true importance and the nature of consciousness. The unified theory created by the author allowed him to solve an insoluble task. He could unite a great number of natural phenomena, seemingly incompatible, in a single whole, in one harmonious system...

The book contains 82 high-quality author's illustration.

The Anisotropic Universe

Laws of nature are formed at the macrocosmic and microcosmic levels. Man, as a living creature, exists in so-called intermediate world – between macro- and micro-world. In this intermediate world he has to deal only with manifestations of natural laws, but not with them as such. As a result, it is almost impossible to create the complete picture of the Universe. This occurs because man intends to use his sense organs to cognize nature. He fails, because human sense organs cannot give him such possibility owing to the fact that they (organs) were created by nature only as a mechanism of adaptation to the ecological niche, which man occupies, not as a tool of cognition...

The book contains 99 high-quality author's illustration.

Russian History Viewed through Distorted Mirrors. Vol 1

As any Russian I always has been interested in the history of my country. In my childhood I read a lot of historical novels, books on history of both Russia and other

countries of the world. As I went on gaining and analyzing historical information available, my heart and mind began to fill with bewilderment and indignation. Every nation on Earth, independently their real role in the destiny of the world, wrote their own Great History using for this purpose both real events, folk legends and some times purely fictitious events. There would be nothing unusual in it but except for just one snag ... everything applied to the history of Russia was filled with uncovered hatred of those who wrote its history. According to their opinion the Slavs lived in earthen pits up to the 9th century and were such primitive that even did not have their own state system and had to invite Varangians to govern. Also they lived in horrified ignorance until in the 10th century two saints, Cyril and Mefodiy, created the Slavonic written language on the basis of the Greek language shedding thus the “light of knowledge” on the obtuse Slavs. Also Mongols had kept Russian people in slavery for three hundred years and only when Peter the Great cut through a “window” to Europe and transformed Russia in accordance with European standards, Russia became the Great Empire, etc. Any well-educated person understands perfectly that history is written according to the orders of those in power and is rewritten following their requirements and desire. Therefore, it would be appropriate to ask who were these “historians” and why were they reluctant to create for Russian rulers something similar to that, what had been created for Jewish, Chinese, Greek, Roman and other nations and empires?..

The book contains 42 high-quality author's illustration.

The Mirror of my Soul

An Autobiographic chronicle. Vol 1

There are several reasons why I decided to write my own biography. First, whenever I had occasion to talk about some events of my life, my stories would often come back to me in the form of the most unimaginable “folklore.” In fact, my tales took on such “facts” and colorations that even I listened to them with interest. The second reason that impelled to such a “feat” was the fact that every now and then someone would appear and offer to write my biography—and every time something stopped me. Once I even agreed to have an American woman author garner my recollections onto audiocassettes and spent several days with her recording them. But then I changed my mind and gave up the offer.

First of all, I had to expend a lot of time describing and explaining events that had happened to me. Secondly, to my utter astonishment, writers and journalists managed to distort everything despite their having my recorded recollections: this would include exaggerating, distorting facts and sometimes simply telling bare-faced lies. Therefore, when Dmitri Baida, the administrator of my web site, suggested that I write the biography myself, I decided to do just that. And—as the process unfolded, it also became the interpretation of my views on life.

I thought that if my life and my *modus vivendi* were interesting to people, then nobody was more qualified than I to convey what and when things happened in my life, what I thought as to one or another situation, what I felt and experienced. Cer-

tainly, everything that I am about to describe will be highly subjective and will reflect the outer world through my own eyes. But despite all this, I will try to reflect everything with maximum objectivity, as much as possible. As this is my biography, nobody will do it better than I, and if there is any distortion it will be my distortion of my own biography, which is better than distortions made by someone else.

www.levashov.org
www.levashov.info
www.levashov.name

Chapter 7. The evolutionary history of mankind

A still remaining mystery of life is the appearance of man on planet Earth... In order to account for this, many religions on earth hold that man is a creation of God, fashioned in His image and likeness.

Let us look at the Christian version of this theme.

In the beginning, God created the Earth and all the plants and animals therein. And when this was done, God created man. Man dwelt in the Garden of Eden without constraints, except that he must not partake of fruit from “**the Ttree of knowledge**”. But the Devil appeared in the image of a serpent, tempting Adam and Eve to taste the forbidden fruit. And when they succumbed, God banished them to sinful Earth so that man could expiate his transgression by the sweat of his brow...

The skin of the “Tapple of knowledge” represents ignorance and darkness; the pulp – symbolizes the light of knowledge.

As soon as Adam bit the apple's skin, his mind was engulfed in darkness; but when his teeth barely grazed the pulp, a spiral of light, the light of knowledge flashed through his brain. And henceforth, the progeny of these first Earth dwellers continue to live on sinful Earth in expiation for the ancestral lapse.

Eastern philosophy offers a different explanation.

It postulates the existence of a LOGOS on solar, galactic and cosmic levels, that creates all of life on the planet, including man, and has total dominion over all creation. The Logos is neither man nor beast, nor supercreature – but a pure superconsciousness – creator of the universe and all that exists in it. It foreordains everything touching man – his destiny, his birth, his death. No one and nothing can alter what the Logos has ordained.

In Western philosophy of the nineteenth and twentieth centuries, Hegel, for example, sees mankind's destiny as controlled by an “Absolute Idea” (a kind of “World Soul”), which is the collective intelligence of the whole human race. In this view, the brain of a single individual is but one “neuron” among the millions making up the global brain. Man, as an individual, cannot think or develop; such functions belong only to the (absolute) collective intelligence of humanity as a whole.

Natural scientists have tried to explain man's appearance as a result of the evolution of planetary life and the mutations of anthropoid apes, leading to rudimentary intelligence and, later, to the human species. Darwin's theory of evolution became the theoretical basis for this ascientific position. However, for many years, **Darwin** was tortured by doubts and never sure of the correctness of his theory. Eventually, without any external pressure – at the peak of his scientific renown, he **renounced his theory of evolution**.

So how, then, did man appear on our fair planet?

Research in paleontology and anthropology has come up with some startling findings that seem to have deadlocked modern science: **Homo Sapiens appeared on**

Earth thirty to forty thousand years ago on all continents, all at the same time. Moreover, from the standpoint of anatomy and physiology, Homo Sapiens could not have been the evolutionary product of any fossilized ape.

For reasons unknown, Neanderthals, which had inhabited the planet for hundreds of thousands of years and were physically much stronger than Homo Sapiens, suddenly disappeared off the face of the Earth. How to explain **why Homo Sapiens, few in number and much weaker than the native inhabitants**, suddenly emerged – from where no one knows – and **forced the Neanderthals out** – just wiping them off the face of the Earth one fine day. Only in extremely inaccessible locales can a few remnants of the once numerous and powerful race of Neanderthals be found – for example, the “Abominable Snowman” who shuns an encounter with the human race¹⁹.

Also noteworthy is that **all human races appeared simultaneously and were racially purer than they are today** – another mystery surrounding the origin of mankind.

Moreover, our genetic research yielded another startling fact – **the genetic structure of a human is totally different from that of all other life on the planet. Genetically the human species is not part of the planet's life system.** According to American scientists, **humans appear to be a GENETIC MISTAKE in the development of life on planet Earth.**

Also, still unexplained, is the disappearance of the dinosaurs in the Cretaceous period. Some theorists tried to implicate solar activity and glaciation of the planet to explain such a mass extinction. But these phenomena have occurred before on the planet without causing the demise of these animals. Also, during various ice ages of the planet, huge areas in the equatorial zone were spared, yet the dinosaurs perished there as well. Only in a few remote areas can one find some of their descendants: in the Congo jungle a hippopotamus-devouring monster survives and mysterious giants inhabit the ocean's depths.

In the mythology of practically all the world's nations, tales abound of stalwart warriors slaying dinosaurs and dragons...

Let us mention briefly another enigma – that of the **Dogon** tribe of West Africa.

The ordained elders of this tribe transmit the legend, from one generation to another, that **their ancestors came from the distant star, Sirius**. And since time immemorial, the information about the star and its planetary system, handed down to their descendants, is totally consistent with modern astrological data. So we may well wonder – where did the Dogons get their information about the position of the stars – data that can only be obtained through the use of modern telescopes?

How could the human race have appeared on Earth thirty to forty thousand years ago and where did it come from? And why have human beings not changed

¹⁹ Teilhard de Chardin, Pierre, *The Phenomenon of Man*, New York, Harper Collins, 1975, see Chapter entitled “The Homo Sapiens Complex”.

at all over thousands of years? And why, is it, as Teilhard de Chardin points out, that only precise analysis of C13 concentration can determine the difference between a fossilized specimen of Homo Sapiens and a human that is recently deceased?

Still another puzzle is the fact that **during a person's lifetime only 3–5% of his brain neurons function?** Initially all neurons were thought to participate in brain activity, but research has shown otherwise – namely, that **from birth to death the same 3–5% of the brain neurons do all the work. The remaining 95–97% are merely the “reserve.”**

We may well ponder the need for such a reserve in humans and how it developed in the first place. And, interestingly enough, that 3–5% of interactive neurons happens to be the exact amount needed for **intelligence to emerge**. With less than that amount, **no qualitative change can occur and therefore no intelligence develops** (See Ch.3, Vol. 1).

How can one account for the fact that **only that precise figure – no more nor less – can result in human intelligence?** To unravel this mystery, let us turn to the stars...

The great cosmos contains billions of universes with closed-space systems of varying size and structure. Within these systems dwell billions of civilizations, creating their own unions.

Highly advanced civilizations navigate space in so-called “zero-transition” vessels, according to set programs that fold and unfold outer space. Often, of late, such craft have approached our own solar system and planet. They can traverse space over vast distances, inconceivable to modern man. Still, even their travel range is limited – depending upon the durability of their construction material and the capacity of their pilots. For a grasp of the problem, we must first understand the principle of UFO travel and how it is regulated. Its basis is the curvature of space, a natural condition of the cosmos.

All material bodies, including, for example, the stars, have an impact on their surrounding space – in essence, distorting it and causing it to curve. Our own sun does likewise, changing the light waves in its vicinity from a rectilinear to a curvilinear direction, which enables astronomers to see what lies behind it.

Stars of our sun class minimally curve the space around them. Neutron stars, possessing small volume but huge mass, (3–5 star masses) also curve their space, but to a much greater degree.

Black holes with a diameter in the range of tenths of a kilometer and a mass in the range of **8–10** solar masses curve their space to such a degree that parallel universes in their vicinity become joined together; at the linkage site primary matter from our universe starts overflowing onto a parallel one.

Now, what is true of macrocosms applies equally to microcosms: Each atomic nucleus curves the space around it, but on a microscale in the neighborhood of 10^{-13} – 10^{-15} m. The heavier the nucleus, the greater the degree of the curvature. However,

when the atomic weight exceeds 200 units, the nucleus is rendered unstable and starts disintegrating into simpler, more stable nuclei. This accounts for the existence of radioactive elements (see Ch. 1 and 2, Vol. 1).

On a microcosmic level, organic compounds, due to their particular molecular configuration (long lines of carbon chains), significantly curve their microspace. In the vicinity of heavy organic compounds, this causes the qualitative barrier between the planets physical and etheric levels to disappear, which, in essence, represents the qualitative distinction between organic and inorganic compounds.

As the simpler substances disintegrate, their constituent forms of primary matter start flowing over from the physical to the etheric level, resulting in a qualitatively new organization of matter – namely, **living matter**.

Just as, on a macrocosmic level, primary matter flows from one universe onto a parallel one, so, on a microcosmic level, matter flows from the physical to the etheric spheres of our planet in the region of large molecules, such as **RNA** and **DNA**.

The mechanisms and the laws are the same in macro- and microspace, yet each has its own peculiarities.

For example, when during the evolution of organic life forms, a cell emerges and the mechanisms of cell division develop, **a qualitative phenomenon arises, impossible to observe in macrospace**: During cell division, a cell is completely obliterated and vanishes out of existence. Its component primary matters flow over to the etheric level and there **create a duplicate version of the cell**. It is only after a certain time elapses that etheric cells start acquiring physical cells.

This process has actually been captured on videotape through the use of tunnel microscopy: during cell division the video footage registered the total disappearance of the old cell and the emergence, some time thereafter, of two new cells – exact replicas of the original.

On the level of the living cell, a complete flow of primary matter from one level to another and back occurs in the process of division. This happens in every living cell – of every living organism – millions and millions of times, over and over again...

This provided the clue to solving the problem of **intergalactic travel**. Once space civilizations had grasped the mechanism of primary matter flow between parallel levels, they were able to develop and apply the technology for the design of their **“zero-transition” ships – the so-called UFO's**.

“Zero-transition” spacecraft possess a **biometallic structure** – that is, they are composed of huge organic molecules like DNA and RNA, which have heavy metal attached to their vacant valence bonds. This enables the craft to curve the microspace not only between the parallel levels of the planets but also, on the macroscopic level, between parallel universes. All it takes is to set into action a process similar to that of cell division: a large mass of primary matter can then flow from one universe over to another, where the physical laws may be different. The final step is to aim the return

flow of matter not at the point of origin but at the destination point – thus securing the ship's arrival at that point.

“Zero-transition” craft are controlled by **the psi-fields which their pilots** generate. The greater the distance to be covered, the greater the psi-field needed. One pilot alone cannot generate such power; several pilots must synchronize their action with absolute precision and each must contribute a portion of his psi-field power needed for the transit. Any malfunction of the system would render **the vessel unable to leave the parallel universe and materialize at the intended destination; this would result in the explosion and disintegration of the vessel.**

Such an explosion was actually observed on planet Earth. The famous Tunguss meteorite was a “zero-transition” ship from the constellation Cygnus that failed to leave the parallel universe and ultimately exploded. This is why the wreckage fragments and the expected radioactive contamination were never detected.

It is noteworthy that the vessel's cyborg construction reduced the catastrophic outcome to an absolute minimum. The crew abandoned ship in life capsules in the northern part of western Siberia, from where they were later picked up. The craft switched to auto pilot and veered ninety degrees on its collision course – a maneuver no comet or meteorite could ever execute. How did Earth scientists later account for this? By reporting that a meteorite had entered Earth's atmosphere – and that during the combustion a plasma explosion had occurred.

Such disasters are not at all rare in the cosmos. The risk increases in proportion to the distance traveled. The greater the number of pilots, the easier it is to lose harmony and synchronization of operation. Consequently, the crew is limited in number – to four pilots in medium-distance flights and six in long-distance flights, the latter, of course, being at higher risk for disaster.

Thus, any highly-advanced civilization is limited in its ability to penetrate the cosmos – according to the durability of its “zero-transition” ships and the potential of the psi-field which its intelligent beings are able to generate. Regrettably, since both these parameters are limited, the development of all civilizations in the cosmos is slowed down. The rulers of a major coalition of Light civilizations numbering billions, undertook the task of trying to find a solution to this problem.

Since any technology has its “upper limit” of potential development, they decided to artificially create **a New Intelligent Being by combining the qualities of different but genetically compatible civilizations.**

Nine planets – including Earth – were prepared for **the EXPERIMENT**. We should note that all of the planets selected were on the brink of destruction for one reason or another – among them, **planet EARTH**.

By artificially accelerating and monitoring the evolution of life on the planet, **they created an ecological system of the required type.** (The mechanisms of natural and artificially controlled evolution are discussed in Ch. 4, Vol. 1).

Shortly thereafter, the occupants of the chosen ecological niche succumbed to

“genetic bombs” and soon became extinct. The vacant niche was then re-populated **thirty to forth thousand years ago by a humanoid species, later calling themselves HOMO SAPIENS**. As a result, species from many different civilizations wound up on planet Earth, all of whom **were genetically compatible and capable of siring offspring that were a combination of their parents' genetic qualities**.

However, despite the compatible genetic templates, **three different groups of humanoids** emerged, each constituting a distinct civilization composed of members genetically close to one another. These groups were **the prototypes of the races on Earth – white, yellow and black**. Each racial type inhabited a region in which the climate most closely resembled that of the home planet. This made for a more rapid adaptation to the new conditions. We should also note that **all the civilizations participated voluntarily, and that all the humanoids went without hesitation**.

Participation in the experiment was based on the potential for genetic compatibility, as well as the presence of certain qualities and properties. Therefore, many civilizations from various evolutionary levels took part in the experiment. But **the melding of many different qualities and properties in a single individual entails an intense genetic fusion**. To accomplish all this **the PARTICIPANTS' BRAINS WERE CLOSED, with only a minimal amount of working neurons left – just enough to provide a trace of their owners' intelligence**.

That is why **humans have only 3–5% of actively working neurons**. To activate the remainder would require the evolutionary development of the species as a whole or of a specific member of the species.

All experimental subjects were severely regressed in their evolution – to a state of savagery. Under these conditions the tribes attacked each other, slaughtered the males, and took the females as wives or concubines. The resulting offspring were a mixture of qualities. Everything was in turmoil.

Stronger tribes absorbed the weaker ones and, in turn, were absorbed by even stronger ones.

And so the wheel of evolution was set in motion and still continues to the present day. Those who started it have kept it under constant surveillance and never allowed it to stop or slow down. Mostly such influence was not apparent to the subjects, but in certain cases it happened to be more obvious.

For example, special groups were at work on the planet, providing timely knowledge conducive to development. Such cases of active intervention and influence are chronicled in **Greek mythology: the Greeks gave names to these special humanoids dwelling among them and worshiped them as gods**. Recall the legend of Prometheus, who gave man the gift of fire and taught him how to use it.

Several gods of the ancient Greeks, including Zeus, Athena, Diana, Gaea and Apollo, provided knowledge on a wide range of subjects. They were later designated as patrons of certain specific types of activity identified with them.

Most intriguing in Greek mythology is the allusion to Mount Olympus, **the**

abode of the gods which no mere mortal could enter. Only heroes and demigods were admitted. The gods, though **endowed with immortality and eternal youth**, sometimes desired and courted mortals. From such unions sprang beings as common as any other mortal. A very curious mythology – is it not?

Legends and traditions of many nations abound in gods descending from the skies in flaming chariots and bestowing knowledge and the laws of life. Aztec and Mayan tribes worshiped a fair-skinned, blue-eyed god who alighted from the skies. The knowledge these Indian tribes had still amazes modern scientists: their calendar was much more accurate than the Europeans'; they could calculate the movement of the stars and planets and perform cranial trepanation as well as many other feats.

Unfortunately **the Inquisition officials who accompanied the conquistadors destroyed most of the books containing this precious information.** The only reason a handful of conquistadors could triumph over the native armies, numbering in the millions, was that the Indians mistook them for the fair-skinned, blue-eyed gods returning to chastise them for their sins. Therefore they yielded with almost no resistance.

There were also other cases of intervention, in which humans received knowledge through telepathic contact. In these cases, the recipients created a cult which viewed God as **omniscient and incorporeal.**

Interestingly, whenever a god or gods appeared – either as bodily or non-corporeal entities – a cradle of an ancient civilization sprung up. (This is further detailed in William Bramley's *Gods of Eden*)²⁰.

Why then, we may ask – after the initial limitations imposed on human brain capacity (95–97% dormant) did **visible and invisible interventions occur in the later course of the experiment?**

First, there were occasions when other civilizations intervened, who were unaware of the ongoing experiment or whose space ships crashed in the vicinity of the Earth.

Secondly, interventions were made in accordance with the experimental program itself, in order to accelerate the evolutionary progress of Earth's civilizations.

A permanent base exists here on Earth of those who initiated the experiment on our planet. It is located in a poorly accessible region of Tibet, called SHAMBHALA.

Interestingly enough, **none but the Initiated can find their way to Shambhala.** A transparent wall, dense and elastic, springs up in front of people trying to enter. In our time, engines stall there and no latter-day technology has been able to penetrate. This is reminiscent of Mount Olympus, where an invisible wall would spring up before common mortals.

²⁰ Bramley, William, *The Gods of Eden*, San Jose, CA, Avon Books, 1993

Thirdly, assistance and intervention occurred in the following manner: **a highly-developed cosmic spirit would come to one of the higher mental spheres of Earth to be incarnated on the planet.** This resulted in **the birth of a human child, inhabited by a space spirit.** This child was reared and educated on Earth, and, eventually his spirit passed through the first stage of its development. The barriers were removed, so that he could now recall his past incarnations and understand **who he was, where he came from and why he was incarnated on Earth.** It was only after **he recognized his destiny that he began to take action.**

Among such entities are **BUDDHA, KRISHNA, and CHRIST**, all of whom have contributed greatly to the human race. Unfortunately, they are still misunderstood and their teachings still grossly distorted.

There are several ways that space entities may incarnate on Earth:

a) **The spirit's memory and knowledge of his incarnation are completely closed.** After birth, he knows nothing of his origin or purpose on Earth. It is only after he achieves a certain level of development that he makes telepathic contact with those who sent him. It is only then that he begins to grasp completely his mission on Earth.

b) **Right from the beginning of his incarnation the spirit maintains telepathic contact with those who dispatched him. This continues throughout the critical stages of his development, and no deviations are allowed from the charted course of the planet's evolution.**

c) **From the very first day of his incarnation, the spirit recognizes his origin and mission.**

Fourthly, the many civilizations in outer space embrace an array of different ideologies and, accordingly are organized in a variety of different coalitions. Tentatively, we may divide them into three categories: **Light, Gray, and Dark.**

The Light civilizations adhere to the code of **SPACE LAWS** following the basic tenets outlined below:

a) **Each civilization has the right to choose its own path of evolutionary development, no matter what it might be.**

b) **Highly developed civilizations may render assistance to less advanced civilizations only if requested.**

c) **Highly developed civilizations are forbidden to terminate life**, even non-intelligent life, on another planet. They are forbidden to robotize or train psi or any other weapons upon less advanced civilizations.

d) **Highly developed civilizations are forbidden to apply any measures, other than precautionary**, against members of less advanced civilizations.

e) **Use of violence against members of less advanced civilizations is permissible only if the latter's action would lead to major disaster.** The extent of the violence should be kept at a minimum.

f) **The use of holographic camouflage and deception is strictly forbidden**

and punishable. Penalties include nullification, that is, total obliteration of the spirit as well as of the physical body.

g) No civilization may perform experiments of possible detriment to another civilization without the latter's consent.

h) Highly developed civilizations are forbidden to transmit knowledge to less advanced civilizations that may be potentially dangerous to others.

i) Every civilization has a right to join a coalition or to develop independently.

Gray civilizations do not feel bound by any of the laws which the Light universes observe (with the exception of provisions c, f, g, and h, which they do observe).

Dark civilizations feel they are above all laws, recognizing only the law of might. They will do or use anything whatsoever to implement their ideas and achieve their goals.

The Earth experiment owes its beginning to a huge coalition of Light civilizations. However, during certain phases of its evolutionary development, **the Dark civilizations tried to intervene and transform Earth into a civilization like their own.** We will explore this in more detail later.

We should also like to point out certain facts on record in mankind's history, depicting how spacecraft from other civilizations wound up on planet Earth and how their crew members had to remain and intermarry with the descendants of the planet's first settlers.

Most interesting is the history of China and Egypt. Our solar system used to have a tenth planet, Phaeton, which was catastrophically broken up by gravitational forces (its remnants now constitute an asteroid belt in our solar system). Several of the Phaetonians had a chance to escape in space ships. In the search for a suitable planet a portion of the space fleet landed on Earth and its Phaetonian occupants settled down forever on "blue planet Earth." Thus **the ancient civilization of China** made its first appearance on Earth.

The planet Phaeton orbited between Jupiter and Mars. Mars had its own civilization that had reached the space stage of its evolution. Phaeton's catastrophe destroyed the Martian atmosphere and a small band of Martians was able to escape in a space ship and land on Earth at the bank of the river Nile. These newcomers, whose memory remained open, were fairly advanced in their development. Owing to their superior knowledge and abilities, they readily conquered the local tribes. Unfortunately, the Martians found planet Earth to be like a desert island to shipwrecked survivors. Separated from their advanced technology, they were unable to implement their surviving knowledge and expertise because Earth had not yet developed any advanced technology. Gradually the Martians began to merge with the local tribes, producing the powerful Egyptian civilization that held sway for centuries throughout the lower reaches of the Nile.

Interestingly, the **Egyptian pyramids and sphinxes on planet Earth** precisely match the photographs of **pyramids and sphinxes found on Mars**.

It is difficult to fathom how the Egyptians could have built such pyramids – which are impossible to build even with today's technology. How could they have constructed such giants – with building blocks so dovetailed into one another that it is impossible to insert a knife blade between them?

Another noteworthy fact – in the center of the pyramids there is an area where **time practically stands still** or, more precisely, **matter remains unchanged** (a fact confirmed by recent experiments). Cells of mummies placed in the center of a pyramid still retain elements of life. Egyptian priests knew **the laws that govern how form influences space**. Quite a feat for ancient Egyptians – is it not?

Some elements of sacerdotal information later formed the basis for **the Free Masons'** body of knowledge. A few are still in use today by some of their followers.

We will return to the Egyptian civilization later, but for now let us consider the stages in the evolution of Earth's civilization.

The evolutionary development of every individual follows a specific sequence: After birth an **etheric body** begins to develop actively until it reaches a certain evolutionary level (each individual has his own), at which point an **astral** body starts evolving and, subsequently, a **mental** body also develops. Each stage of evolution may be accompanied by either favorable or unfavorable conditions, depending upon the following factors:

a) **The quality and quantity of energy currents** impinging on our solar system (including Earth) as it revolves about the center of our galaxy.

b) **The geographical site of one's birthplace and the region where he grows up and develops**. Since Earth is not uniformly pierced by energy currents (neither qualitatively nor quantitatively) it turns out to have **ninety-nine sites** pierced by aggregates of **incoming energy** and **ninety-nine sites emitting outgoing energy** aggregates. These areas constitute the **positive and negative energy nodes of our planet**.

c) **The evolutionary development of an individual's spirit**.

d) **The quantity and quality of the information which the human brain absorbs**.

Just as humans have their stages of evolution, so do civilizations as a whole. Civilizations pass through **an inner, or youthful**, evolution, as well as **an outer, or cosmic, stage**.

The Earth's civilization is currently undergoing its first (youthful) stage of evolution, which has three phases:

a) When **energy currents** piercing the Earth from outer space **are most conducive to the development of etheric bodies (the age of Aries, see [Fig. 103](#))**

b) **When energy currents** piercing the Earth from outer space **are most condu-**

cive to the development of astral bodies (the age of Pisces – “age of the Devil”, see Fig. 104).

c) When **energy currents** piercing the Earth from outer space **are especially conducive to the development of first mental bodies (the age of Aquarius, see Fig. 105).**

Upon completion of these three stages, **the cosmic (outer) stage of evolution** begins. Civilizations at this stage **cannot be robotized or manipulated**. Therefore, any attempt to do so to any civilization, including Earth's has to unfold during the youthful (inner) stage of its development.

Civilizations are most vulnerable during the phase in which the astral bodies start to develop actively (the age of Pisces – “the Devil”). At this time, astral bodies are **most unstable and can easily be blocked for the purpose of producing biorobotic structures** (see Ch. 6, Vol. 1). It was precisely during the age of Pisces that **the Earth's hybrid civilization was bombarded by astral generators located at the ninety-nine nodes of incoming energy currents.**

These generators created an energy structure that ensured the birth of humans with **inborn susceptibility to robotization**. Only spirits on a high evolutionary scale had sufficient potential to restore the normal structure of their bodies and their further energetic development. But these people were physically terminated, bereft of the opportunity to achieve a new qualitative level or to expose and destroy the robotic structure.

A human born with a defective physical structure and energetically primed for robotization can easily be “tuned in” to the control system. It merely takes certain patterns of education and upbringing, which demand absolute obedience to those in control – to become a perfectly fitting gear in the overall controlling apparatus. To this end, the moral codes and philosophy of the Dark civilizations were invoked.

All too often moral values and spirituality were used as bait to lure those seeking purity and truth. Such subjects were manipulated through their etheric, astral and mental levels, but unfortunately most had not the slightest inkling of what was happening to them. And the few who stopped to question were tricked with information that drove them into a maze of confusion, from which only a few could extricate themselves.

Once the vast majority had developed the biorobotic structure, it took only a psi-field to manipulate and totally control them. Such psi weapons have been in use on planet Earth for several thousand years to a greater or lesser degree. The fact of their usage has remained an “hermetically sealed” mystery – hidden to all except the “dedicated” zealots who tried to convince the rest that the notion of psi weapon usage on them was absurd and insane. Meanwhile, they kept actively and efficiently experimenting on the very people they were trying to convince of its non-existence.

Our recent history dramatically illustrates this. . .

Neither Hitler nor Stalin were particularly endowed with great knowledge or su-

perior mentality, yet their effect on masses of people was quite exceptional. They were easily able to incite them to behavior that any single one of them would never have resorted to in a normal state. . . People immolated themselves, destroyed others and annihilated the cream of the nation.

Whole populations **were in the throes of mass psychosis**, hypnotically tranced by these “fuehrers” and “fathers” of nations. . . Hitler's creativity cost the human race **fifty million lives**. The “global experiment” of Soviet socialism (particularly during Stalin's regime) – within a space of seventy-four years-devoured about a **hundred million lives, the cream of the nation in culture, science and the arts...**

Everything that transpired in Russia and Germany during that period was fueled by the use of psi weapons on a mass scale. If a person was able to evolve to the point of achieving harmony between his etheric, astral and mental bodies, the psychic weapon had virtually no effect upon him.

Control of peoples and nations was mercilessly maintained by liquidating everyone who did not fit into the “bed of Procrustes.” The axe fell – first and foremost – on the brightest and best of the nation. And after that, only new “offshoots” were pruned. All it took was dexterity and guile by the “gardeners” to find a rational explanation for yet another of their atrocities.

We may well ask – did the Light civilizations stand by and serenely contemplate what was happening on the planet? The answer is – emphatically “No!” Their emissaries, right from the start, were working to prevent the manipulation of the Earth's civilization. One of these emissaries from the Light civilizations was **Jesus Christ**.

Incarnated on Earth, he grew up among humans like any ordinary mortal. But he kept evolving until his spirit overcame all Earth barriers and he was able to contact those who had sent him. He knew then **where he came from and why he was sent to Earth**. And yet he also realized that, in his time, **the human race was not yet ready to accept and understand what he had to offer... He was prepared to save the people from robotization, but the people were not ready to be saved by anyone**.

Jesus said, “***He that hath ears to hear, let him hear***,”²¹ but only a few heard... He summoned people to the light, to truth and knowledge. He opened their hearts and people began to “see clearly...” (He simply removed the robotization module from the solar plexus and the heart chakra, but, unfortunately, nobody understood this). As the deception fell away, people suddenly opened up to the truth, toward the good, and no longer wished to do harm unto others...

Christ strove to help people save their souls and avoid sinking into the morass of darkness. He was a true warrior for the light, for purity and for righteousness. He grappled internally with his knowledge, with the power of his intellect: “***Think not that I come to send peace on earth: I came not to send peace, but a sword***.”²² He

²¹ New Testament, Matthew Chapter 11, verse 15, King James Version.

²² New Testament, Matthew Chapter 10, verse 34, King James Version.

never took a passive stance, never called for meek acceptance of one's destiny or resignation to one's fate – as those who found his teachings most disadvantageous tried to depict him later.

“I am not sent but unto the lost sheep of the house of Israel,”²³ he declared. Christ came to help those already under the effect of psi weapons, but time ran out and he lost the opportunity to do so.

After his crucifixion, he was resurrected on the third day by those who had sent him... Jesus left the planet Earth in his physical body on a “zero-transition” ship, along with those who came to revive and rescue him.

In the earliest Christian frescoes and icons, one may see flying objects that greatly resemble the UFO's that nowadays have started appearing so often on Earth. They are depicted right above the place of Christ's crucifixion and ascension.

It is only in our time, **with the advent of the age of Aquarius**, that **a new evolutionary stage is dawning for mankind – only if he is ready to transition to a new qualitative level**, only if he can **accept and understand** an enormous body of knowledge – and if he does not self-destruct in the meantime.

The new **space knowledge** is essential if humanity is to live through and **survive** this critical stage of its evolution.

Much of the groundwork has been laid. **In 1989 all astral generators were dismantled**, freeing people from a long-standing repressive field. Now we must simply accept and comprehend the new knowledge and move ahead on our evolutionary journey.

Everything now depends on us, the human race. Are we really ready and willing to accept all this – or will we turn aside just as our forbears did in the time of Christ?

The age of Aquarius is coming – the age of knowledge and spirituality – the age of a powerful surge in mental and spiritual development.

Energy currents coursing over the surface of our planet happen to vary from one geographical locale to another – both qualitatively and quantitatively.

Different nations differ in their genetic templates: therefore, **the evolutionary process of spirits with different genetic structures will also vary one from another**. For example, one type of genetic structure can maximally assimilate a certain qualitative type of energy and accelerates evolution, while another genetic type, under the same conditions, develops slowly or not at all. Periodically, external conditions may become negative for one or another genetic type (owing to the composition of the energies coursing over the planet's surface). In that case, the genetic type does not develop, but instead is retarded in its progress.

When the Earth's energy currents and those from outer space are in harmony with a genetic structure (evoking a kind of energy resonance), the growth of a people

²³ New Testament, Matthew Chapter 15, verse 24, King James Version.

or a nation is truly astounding. Such a nation starts playing an active role in the historical arena, which culminates in a golden age of statehood, culture and economy.

When the structure of the energies shifts, a gradual recession ensues – a twilight of the nation or people following the stage of rapid growth and ascendancy. Another nation or people, whose energy currents are harmonious with their genetics, then takes center stage in the historical arena.

Each era in the history of the human race has its characteristic quality and structure of the energy currents impacting the Earth's surface from outer space. Therefore, during the various epochs in mankind's history, different types of genetic structures have enjoyed active evolutionary progress. In the course of each, energy currents show a certain spectrum of changes, causing one or another population of a particular genetic type to embark on an active evolutionary development.

Of interest here are the evolutionary phenomena involved in population migration. When a population occupied an area energetically incompatible to its genetic structure, evolutionary progress was sluggish, and etheric body formation was deficient. The males lacked physical vigor and aggressiveness – which meant a dearth of strong and valiant warriors.

Astral bodies were only weakly developed – which adversely affected the development of art, culture and spirituality.

Deficient development of mental bodies had a negative effect on the progress of the economy and technology.

The total effect was to render the population incapable of withstanding its stronger, actively-developing neighbors. So, crowded out, it was forced to migrate over great distances abandoning the terrain of such interest to its more aggressive neighbors. Journeying thus, the population finally settled in a region with an energy structure far different from its original abode. And if the energetic and genetic structures happened to resonate with each other, the people now experienced a rapid surge in their evolutionary development.

Such abrupt shifts in the history of a people's progress remain a mystery to historians even to this day.

And so, the history of mankind offers colorful evidence of the evolutionary mechanisms at work in conjunction with the laws and vicissitudes of the species.

The Russian historian Goumilev has chronicled periods of activity and passivity in various peoples and nations, but was unable to explain the mechanisms involved. As an historian he was content merely to keep track of the historical facts. But not knowing the laws of human evolution, mankind's evolution and planetary evolution, he was unable to explain his observations.

As the evolution of humanity as a whole unfolds, the energy potential of the genetic structure keeps rising and the developmental levels of human spirits keep advancing.

A stable balance is required – between the energy potential of the genetic struc-

ture and the level of the soul's spiritual development. Upon completion of the inner (youthful) cycle, both the individual and the civilization as a whole ascend to **the space level of evolution**, which involves mental contact with other civilizations. A mental exchange of knowledge and progress begins.

The mental stage of evolution requires a different, more transcendent level of morality, ethics, knowledge, and philosophy, as well as a higher degree of development of the cerebral structures. Both the individual and the civilization must reach the stage at which the spirit has developed at least two or three mental bodies. Otherwise, even possessing a high energy potential, neither the individual nor the civilization will be able to achieve the mental stage of evolution (see [Fig. 106](#)).

Given a high energy potential and an insufficient evolutionary development, a human reaches only the various Earth levels. Quite often, lacking knowledge of evolutionary laws, people come in contact with the astral or (less frequently) the mental level of Earth. Misinterpreting what is happening, they believe themselves in contact with God, or the “Absolute” or some superior intelligence.

Creatures living on these levels, who survive by living off the energy of others, are quick to exploit such naivete. They scan the subject's brain, make telepathic contact and conjure up a holographic masquerade – in the image of a trusted object that happens to occupy the subject's thoughts at the time. These mental entities can conjure up complete images and can prognosticate – even in the guise of Jesus, Buddha, Krishna or other deities. They can also assume the image of a deceased beloved or a close friend, lending credence and authenticity to the contact. They then feed on the subject's life energy for their own development and sustenance.

To expose the fraud and establish the true identity of the perpetrator, one must scan the scenario, send out an energy projection programmed to ascertain – on all levels – if the external holographic image really matches the internal content and true intention of the entity producing it.

And so, over and over again, we see how essential our need for knowledge really is – and how only through knowledge can we make sense and clarity out of what must otherwise seem so mysterious and unfathomable.

Chapter 8. The etiology and mechanisms of human disease

Everyone, to a greater or lesser degree, has suffered illness in his life. What is the nature of disease? And what happens to a human organism in the course of an illness? What mechanisms are at work, and why? These and many other questions arise and perplex anyone who tries to fathom just what, after all, constitutes **disease**.

To start with, let us attempt to classify the various types of illnesses:

- 1) **Genetic disease**, transmitted to an individual through the parental genes.
- 2) **Acquired illnesses**, which an individual contracts in the course of his lifetime.
- 3) **Ecological disease**, resulting from the impact of adverse environmental conditions.
- 4) **Karmic disease**, i.e., diseases which the spirit brings with it from previous lives.

The cause of genetic disease is self-explanatory.

Let us delve more deeply into acquired illnesses, which constitute the largest array of man's afflictions.

There are several basic qualitative states that arise in the course of such illnesses:

- a) Infections which invade the body and develop inside the host.
- b) Defense reactions of the body's immunological system (active phase of the disease).
- c) Secreted toxins and metabolic waste products discharged into the body by the infecting agent.
- d) Structural changes in the diseased organs and systems.

Let us now look more closely at **how diseases develop in the human organism**.

When infection enters the body, the "intruders" at first are not very numerous, so scarcely elicit any reaction at all on the part of the organism: the latter requires a certain concentration of poisons and metabolic waste. Thus, initially, the infection develops without any response from the human organism. This is the so-called **incubation period**, the first stage of the disease. It is only after the developing pathogens collectively inject a certain level of toxins into the bloodstream that the brain is alerted to triggering the body's defense mechanisms.

The immune system's immediate response is to try to destroy the invaders. **Its first active defense reaction is to increase the bodily temperature**. This is because most pathogens cannot survive a temperature elevation above 39–40°C. Thus, the or-

ganism, without knowing “the face of the enemy” delivers a thermal strike against the aggressor. Therefore, any therapeutic attempt to bring down a rise in temperature is totally incorrect – except in the following cases:

a) When the temperature reaches a certain critical level of about 42°C , which is the point at which proteins start to coagulate. It is particularly important to prevent the coagulation of fibrinogen (a blood protein) and the resultant production of fibrin, i.e., blood clots, which are potentially lethal to the body.

b) When the body on its own is unable to cope with the temperature elevation.

In all other instances, an active fever is simply a sign of an intense defense reaction on the part of the body.

Meanwhile, as the pathogens try to recover from the thermal blow dealt by the organism, the latter is busily keeping them under surveillance and starts producing antibodies in an attempt to annihilate them. Phagocytes (white blood cells) also rally to the defense – by absorbing the invader – killing themselves in the process and producing a huge concentration of pus, which has an adverse effect on the organism.

The pathogens start adjusting to the new unhealthy conditions which the organism’s survival battle creates for them.

They start changing – mutating – in order to continue their development any way they can. It is, after all, a life and death struggle for them as well. Failure to adapt spells their demise, for the human body represents their needed habitat. Thus, a competition unfolds between the organism and the infection: whichever adapts faster will emerge the victor. In most cases, the pathogens, having a much simpler organization, change faster than the defense reaction of the human immune system. It is crucially significant that at the very moment that the body’s defense reaction kicks in, the immune system, which has a stored energy potential, generates a protective surge (“splash”) of maximum strength (see [Fig. 107](#)).

But the immune system is unable to sustain this surge, owing to the organism’s need to expend a huge amount of energy to maintain it. Soon thereafter, the exhausted immune system must switch off to rest and recuperate: total recovery requires a considerable length of time.

During this interim the body is unable to fight the infection, which resumes progressing at a much faster pace than the immune system can recover. As soon as the quantity of secreted toxins exceeds the tolerable level, the brain activates the immune system all over again – quite often before the latter has had a chance to restore its potential to the normal level.

This triggers the immune system to switch on earlier than optimum, at time t_1 , causing its energy surge to be less than its initial J_{\max} . This continues until its exhaustion, robbing the system of its ability to significantly check the progress of the infection. Thus, the first **active phase in the progress of the disease**, W_1 , comes to an end, ushering in the second and **chronic phase of disease**, W_2 .

Amidst all this, not only does the system’s immune reaction undergo change, but

many other fundamental alterations also occur in the body. To understand the latter, let us first explore how the human brain coordinates and monitors the functions and activity level of every single organ and system in the body.

There is a specific cortical area that orchestrates and governs the functioning of all bodily organs and systems by generating nerve signals through its locally branching-out neuronal apparatus (the axons). From here the signals are relayed to the reticular formation (see [Fig. 108](#)), the so-called “primitive brain” and thence to a corresponding area in the spinal cord, from which they pass to the sympathetic branch of the autonomic nervous system. A control signal is then transmitted through the sympathetic nerve connected to a specific organ, such as the pancreas, which, in turn, responds by activating its function. As the organ responds to the sympathetic signal, this triggers a nerve receptor of the parasympathetic system to send signals to the corresponding area in the spinal cord via the parasympathetic nerve branch.

The spinal nerves, in turn, relay the message to the reticular formation, where the signals are compared against standards consistent with the organ’s normal functioning. If everything checks out, the brain continues to function normally. If there is a discrepancy between the incoming nerve signals and the standard, it will be transmitted to a specific region of the brain cortex. At the same time, changes keep occurring in both the structure and amplitude of the monitoring signals. This will continue until the system reverts to its optimal condition. However, if a pathogen is triggering a change in an organ’s functioning, it will activate the immune system’s defense reactions as well.

If the immune response is unable to significantly stem the progress of the infection, and despite this the organism still survives, the following change will occur:

The brain now interprets the altered functional status of the organ and organism **as a new norm** and modifies all its mechanisms to maintain the stability of the new standard – in order to forestall a worsening of the situation.

Henceforth the organism no longer responds when an organ changes to a status less than optimal. Only when the pathogen attempts to gain a new “foothold” for itself does everything get activated again and the sequence repeats itself . . . The disease now enters **a chronic phase**, with periods of activation.

A word about **medication** . . .

The efficacy of practically all medicines depends upon the **suppressant effect of these poisons on any living organism – both the pathogen and the invaded organism**. The assumption is that destroying the pathogens promptly and efficiently would not significantly harm the organism – which then would quickly return to its normal condition. Unfortunately, however, in order to survive, the pathogen promptly adapts to the medicinal poisons administered, thereafter remaining totally impervious to them.

What, then, is really happening here? In such a situation, the effect of the poison is directly proportional to its concentration. But as soon as the medicinal poison exceeds a concentration which the organism can tolerate, the latter is helpless to neu-

tralize the effect of these poisons on its organs and **dies of medicinal poisoning**. Moreover, from what has been observed, **medications have no effect on the brain's apparatus for monitoring its organs and systems**. Most medications known today have an equally destructive effect on both the pathogen and the human organism. It is hard to say which is the lesser of two evils – dying of the remedy or dying of the disease...

Thus the practice of medicinal treatment in the health field has reached its logical culmination. We can, at least, credit it with this: many pathogens inimical to humans have been wiped out forever. They mostly comprise the ones that were unable to adapt to adverse conditions. Unfortunately, new pathogens like the **AIDS** virus have taken their place. Such agents that are capable of adapting are also capable of continuing their active development within the human body, wrecking irreversible changes. Perhaps it is irrational to continue helping these diseases to “vanquish” the human race, by poisoning and devastating the human organism with the aid and abetment of orthodox medicine.

Other ways of combating illness must be found – that are really capable of helping mankind: for example, the use of one's bioenergy field to effect positive change in an organism. This requires a correct and competent application of energetic influence and a thorough grasp of evolutionary laws and organismic functioning. It is then possible not only to overcome the pathogen but also to restore the organ or system to its normal modus operandi.

Let us now explore another problem that has become the scourge and plague of the late twentieth century and is currently threatening the lives of a significant portion of the planet's population – i.e., the problem of acquired immune deficiency – **the problem of AIDS**.

1) The planet's human population count has significantly surpassed its optimal value for a species of living nature and as a component of the total ecosystem. Excessive density of the collective psi-field thus generated has an adverse effect on the species members producing it. Concomitantly, each member's psi-field weakens and collapses – along with the member's immune system, which is its corresponding counterpart on a physical level. Excessive psi-field density, $\Delta W+$ (see Ch. 3, Vol. I) suppresses the thymus gland, which controls the immune system.

The major impact of the effect occurs, of course, in the regions of densest population – especially the large urban areas. Additionally, excessive density of the collective psi-field depresses an individual's hormonal system, notably **the male sexual function**, leading to premature and wide-spread male impotence. Again, we observe that this effect is especially marked in large cities.

2) Medication, especially during the twentieth century, has actively suppressed the human immune system to a massive degree. Several generations have been exposed to such medicinal onslaught. This has produced offspring with dramatically deficient immune systems, already encoded in their genes.

3) The human species itself, through various practices, has also contributed to

the negative impact of its external environment. In the course of their “conquest” of nature, humans have managed to poison their water, air and soil. Everything that could possibly be damaged has been damaged, thanks to their “intelligent” activity.

The poisons then started seeping into their bodies through their food, water and air. On top of this, humans kept abusing and poisoning themselves – quite voluntarily – with drugs, alcohol and nicotine. All of the above had the net effect of significantly reducing the level of immune activity.

Moreover, a normal protective psi-field has an adverse effect on infections, thereby creating conditions unfavorable for the development of most pathogens.

Active infection can arise in the body only when the psi-defense level drops to a level that a specific pathogen can tolerate. It is only then that the latter can gain a “foothold” and start growing.

As far back as eight hundred years ago the symptoms of AIDS were cited in monastic chronicles. The disease had undoubtedly been around even earlier, but the number of victims was minimal. Only a few individuals had defensive psi-fields so depleted that the AIDS virus could invade their organism.

Indeed, that – and homosexuality, so often blamed for the dissemination of AIDS – has been part of human existence since man came together as a species. From man’s first appearance on Earth up to the present day, the chronicles of all peoples and nations have been replete with accounts attesting to its occurrence.

Nor was the percentage of homosexuals any greater then than it is today – there were simply much fewer people in those days, so the proportion of homosexuals seems quite imposing nowadays. We will address the nature and reasons for the emergence of homosexuality at a later point. For now, let us continue tracing the cause of the AIDS explosion at the end of the twentieth century.

We have already pinpointed the main cause for an AIDS attack – a lowering of the body’s defense activities, permitting the virus free access to the organism and providing it favorable conditions for its development.

Let us postulate a scale of 1 to 10 units (see [Fig. 109](#)), with 10 units as the normal level of a psi system’s defense activity, and 6 units as the level at which favorable conditions prevail for AIDS to develop in a human organism. Accordingly, the possibility of AIDS infection rises as the level of human immune activity drops to 6 units: the virus invades and the incubation period of the disease begins.

The AIDS virus characteristically penetrates the chromosomes of bone marrow cells. The latter cells then start synthesizing an “assembly line” – a continuous outpouring – of new **RNA** molecules for the AIDS virus, which then, right within the bone marrow, proceed to generate a protective protein membrane completely around themselves. The blood stream then conveys the virus to more and more areas of bone marrow, where the same process keeps repeating itself over and over again.

In this process, the virus destroys the organism’s **T-lymphocytes**. Soon the viral concentration so depletes the immune system’s lymphocytes that its activity drops to

2 hypothetical units (see **Fig. 109**). At that level, many other infections can readily invade and grow. Thus, as the AIDS virus continues devastating all the T-lymphocytes, the organism becomes easy prey to all kinds of opportunistic infections.

With the loss of all its protection, the organism succumbs.

There are cases on record where patients showed **a T-count reduced to the level of AIDS victims yet no virus could be detected in the bloodstream**.

Such cases stymied modern medicine. Where was the carrier of the dread disease?

To understand this phenomenon let us recall that in the course of evolution more advanced living organisms frequently drove simpler species from their ecological niche. Similarly, certain viruses – namely the **RNA** molecules encased in protein membranes – lost their physically solid, biological foundation as a result of being absorbed and fragmented by other living organisms. However, the etheric structures – their etheric bodies – survived. Adapting to existence on the planet's etheric plane, they proved more dynamic than those on the physical plane. As this was occurring, the etheric bodies of **extinct viruses** became so dense that they were able to invade and destroy T-lymphocyte structures on the etheric level, resulting in the annihilation of the physical T-structures. It is this state of affairs that so confounded the medical profession.

There is no virus present in the bloodstream, yet the patient keeps losing his T-lymphocytes as if it were. To potentiate the process, favorable conditions must arise for **the invasion of the patient's etheric body by an extinct virus**. This occurs when **not only the protective mechanisms of the physical body weaken, but also the spirit's protective psi-field fails as well**.

By contrast, the etiology of ecological disease is very simple and straightforward.

Humans pollute their environment with large doses of poisons which accumulate in the water, soil and air, then seep into the human organism through the intake of food, water and air. Hence the poisoning – complete with all the sequelae.

In the next chapter, we shall, in greater detail, become acquainted with the etiology of karmic disease.

Chapter 9. The effect of the spirit on the human organism and psyche

Let us now consider the pivotal role of the human spirit... It enters the fertilized egg at the moment of conception – and departs after the physical body expires.

In the course of a human lifetime, the spirit passes through various stages of evolution, affecting the physical body it happens to inhabit at the time. Its basic structure consists of three spiritual bodies – **etheric**, **astral** and **mental**. Every individual possesses each of these spiritual bodies, which may exist merely in rudimentary form, or more or less fully developed.

There is only one basic rule governing this process, e.g.:

A complete astral body may emerge only after a certain critical developmental level is reached, whereby the qualitative barrier between the physical and first mental planes of the planet disappears.

Corollary to this, a complete mental body may emerge only after development of the astral body up to the level of obliterating the qualitative barrier between the planet's physical and first mental planes.

Whenever conditions arise for the development of the next spiritual body, the preceding bodies continue their evolution. The pace may be rapid or slow – that is, any of the bodies may assume a dominant role in the spiritual structure. Thus, any of the bodies may become **disproportionately developed** as compared to the others: it depends upon the actual sequence of their spiritual developments after birth. Moreover, a human being keeps on developing – either positively or negatively – during his entire lifetime.

Thus, in most cases, the changes manifested by each spirit body are consistent with one another. The individual then manifests these changes both psychically and behaviorally.

We may distinguish four basic psychological types:

- 1) **Sanguine** personality
- 2) **Phlegmatic** personality
- 3) **Melancholic** personality
- 4) **Choleric** personality

We have deliberately listed them in this order: let us try to determine why.

Each spiritual body of an individual may, in the process of its development, occupy a dominant position in the basic spiritual structure. However, the mental body is the last to develop, and therefore its qualitative impact on the spiritual structure starts occurring at a later time than that of the other bodies. Most individuals are unable to develop their mental bodies to the predominant position in their spirit's basic structure.

In the human species, the etheric body is fully evolved by the age of six to eight years. At that point, the qualitative barrier opens between the physical and astral planes, and astral body development begins.

People sometimes wonder if, right from the moment of birth, a baby seems to have a certain character and temperament. This is absolutely true and represents no inconsistency whatsoever. At the moment of conception a spirit arrives already possessing a fundamental qualitative structure, which the child's behavior reflects from the very first days of its life.

The spirit's fundamental structure represents merely **a certain point** in the development it has reached **within a given physical body**. That is why the spirit's potential for active development can unfold only when it inhabits a physical body. Let us now explore two types of basic spiritual structure:

- a) When **the etheric body** occupies the dominant position.
- b) When **the astral body** occupies the dominant position.

A review of these two bodies and their effect upon human structure reveals the following:

The human **etheric body** mediates an individual's physical strength and activity, including sexual. That is precisely why adolescents, ranging in age from 16 to 20 years, display heightened sexual activity – the so-called “**oversexed**” stage. At that age, the higher astral body is not yet complete, and the lower astral body happens to be developed to a much greater degree – a condition that manifests in a gamut of negative emotions, including aggressiveness, sadism, etc.

The human **astral body** generally reflects its owner's emotional status. In its lower form it consists of only one type of primary matter, **G**, and manifests a broad spectrum of negative emotions – a state of spiritual impoverishment. A fully-developed astral body, lower and higher, composed of two types of primary matter, **G** and **F**, reflects positive emotions – a more evolved spirituality.

Thus, when **the etheric body** is dominant in the spiritual foundation and the astral body is completely developed, an individual displays a **sanguine type of temperament** (see [Fig. 110](#)). Here, **will** power predominates over the emotions since the emotions are positive in character. Such a person **can control** his emotions.

If the etheric body is dominant, but only the lower astral body is developed, a **phlegmatic type of temperament** manifests (see [Fig. 111](#)). A phlegmatic individual possesses enough strength and will power to stay focused on a specific type of work for long periods of time. But he lacks the positive incentives needed to generate constructive ideas on his own. **There can be no leaders among phlegmatic types**. They are always ready to follow others and to display persistence and fanaticism in their pursuits. Also, they very seldom alter their beliefs and tend to oppose any new ideas or innovative changes.

With the predominance of **the lower astral body**, composed of one type of primary matter, **G** (see [Fig. 112](#)), a **melancholic type of temperament** emerges. Such

an individual is emotionally unstable, passive, and prone to extended periods of depression, often triggered by quite minor problems. The depression stems from the fact that the negative emotions resonate with the energy structure of the lower astral body. This sets up an active link with negative energy currents for extended periods of time, which the subject is unable to “switch off” in order to return to normal.

And, finally, from the predominance of a **fully-developed astral body, composed of two types of primary matter, G (lower) and F (higher astral body), a choleric type of temperament** emerges (see [Fig. 113](#)). This type of individual generates a plethora of positive emotions around him; emotionally labile, he easily shifts from one feeling state to another. But since the structure of his astral body is out of harmony with negative affect, **he cannot sustain any negative emotional state for very long**, but bounces back to an upbeat mood quite readily. Moreover, a choleric individual is easily ignited by ideas, but lacks the will power and persistence to bring them to fruition. If whatever he is engaged in fails to reach a speedy denouement, he quickly drops it, only to be swept away by the next new idea.

For a clearer grasp of the process it is important to understand **what governs the development of the human astral body**.

Upon completion of the first phase of its development – the formation of the lower astral body from one type of matter, **G** – the inner, lower barrier of the astral plane disappears, setting the stage for further development of the human astral body. The higher astral body is now fashioned from matter **F**, followed by the gradual evolution of a complete astral body, from two types of matter, **G** and **F**, possessing a structure resonant with the astral plane. However, there are many **intermediate stages** between the first development from matter **G** to the second development from matter **F**. Therefore, if matter **G** predominates in the astral body, it is appropriate to speak of a **lower astral body**. If, on the other hand, the second type – matter **F** – predominates, we may then speak of a **higher astral body**.

Thus, there are many parameters that define the qualitative structure of an astral body. It is really **next to impossible to find any one “pure” type of temperament**. Each individual keeps changing throughout his entire life and, accordingly, the qualitative structure of his spirit also changes.

Moreover, just as the physical body requires rest to restore its capacity to function, so do each of the spiritual bodies.

We are well aware that the physical body usually shows a **twenty-four hour** diurnal activity cycle (consisting of reciprocal activity and rest patterns, in the course of which the physical body renews its energy potential). By the same token, the spiritual bodies possess a cycle of activity specific and characteristic of each.

We have now come closer to grasping **the nature of human biorhythms**.

An **etheric body's** full cycle of activity is **twenty-three days**, and it affects human physical activity; it is therefore termed the physical biorhythm (see [Fig. 114](#)).

An **astral body's** full cycle of activity is **twenty-eight days** and influences hu-

man emotional activity; it is therefore designated as the emotional biorhythm (see [Fig. 115](#)).

And, lastly, a **mental body's** full cycle of activity extends **thirty-three days**, governing human intellectual activity, and is therefore called the intellectual biorhythm (see [Fig. 116](#)).

We may readily note a relationship between a body's complexity of structure and the duration of its activity cycle: the greater the complexity, the larger the cycle.

If, in rare cases, an individual possesses additional mental bodies, each of these has its own, increasingly greater, specific duration. **The second mental body** has a cycle of **forty-nine days**; **the third mental body**, **seventy-four days**; and **the fourth mental body**, **one hundred ten days**.

Thus, for every individual, biorhythms exert an influence on the type of temperament he happens to possess. Likewise, the type of psyche that results depends upon the periodicity of the spiritual bodies' activity.

Now let us take a closer look at the phenomena which occur during sleep.

You may recall that a protective psi-field develops around the physical body in order to ensure optimal conditions for the development of both body and spirit. This protective energy jacket wards off intrusion by other psi-fields of living organisms as well as the impact of fields from the external environment, including those from other planes of the planet.

The force of impact from other planes, such as the etheric and lower astral, largely depend upon the thickness of the qualitative barrier between the physical and etheric levels of the planet.

The thickness of that barrier has a diurnal cycle – maximal in the daytime and minimal at night (see [Fig. 117](#)). What occurs is the following: during the day, primary matters stream in from the sun, saturating all the planes of the Earth; at night, these planes lose their surplus primary matter (recall the communicating vessels; see Chap.2, Vol. I), which, in turn, reduces the thickness of the qualitative barriers between the various planetary levels.

Consequently, the effects of the attenuated barrier between physical and etheric planes are manifest most markedly between midnight and four a.m. – an interim especially conducive to the invasion of astral creatures.

It is no coincidence that in all fairy tales, folklore and myth, **the Dark Forces** are afoot at that time in the form of demons, werewolves, vampires, witches, etc... Strange as it may seem at first glance, the old tales are much truer than the accounts of modern science.

In addition to the daily fluctuation in barrier thickness between the physical and etheric planes, **the moon** also exerts an influence.

Constituent forms of matter from all the planetary levels **flow over to the moon and saturate its various planes**, just as the sun saturates the Earth planes with its di-

verse forms of primary matter. The effect is at its peak **on nights of the full moon**, which further weakens the qualitative barrier between the physical and etheric planes.

This further enhances the negative effect of the etheric and lower astral levels as they impact the human organism. In this process of barrier neutralization, the protective psi-field also thins out and becomes minimal on nights of the full moon (see **Figs. 118, 119, 120**). Such conditions also favor the activity of astral beasts, who spot the gaps in the body's defense system, penetrate them and drain off the body's potential, **the human life energy**.

Let us recall that the metabolic activity of the physical body breaks down substances and releases their primary matter constituents for use in the development and integration of the subject's spiritual bodies. These same disintegration by-products flow instead, through the breaches in the defense, over to the astral beasts, providing them with the very substances they need to stay intact and avoid disintegration of their spiritual bodies. When this occurs, the structure of the subject's physical cells, along with that of his various spiritual bodies, suffers damage at the point of penetration.

In order to drain off human energy, an astral creature must find some correspondence with the human qualitative structures. But since its evolutionary development is far below that of a human, what occurs, obviously, is the disintegration of the human structures down to the level of the astral creature (see **Fig. 121, 122**). This destroys the qualitative structure of the cells in the affected area down to the etheric level. Such cells lose their normal architecture and start developing through a program that bears no resemblance to that of a human organism. **Cancer cells** develop and proliferate vigorously, resulting in a swift collapse of the organism (see **Fig. 123**). It is not accidental that **cancer cells are identical to those of a zygote**. A rapid and uncontrolled proliferation of tumor cells quickly devours a major portion of the organism's energy. This results in overload of all the organs and systems of the body and their rapid destruction through deprivation of the vital energy needed for their normal functioning. **Cancer occurs because the cell's normal structures are destroyed at the level of a spiritual body**. That is why any effort to extirpate the cancer usually results in tumor recurrence approximately five years later (when regular replacement of an organ's cells normally occurs).

Since such invasions usually originate from the astral plane, the destroyed cells are mostly from the astral body levels. Most cells normally renew their etheric structure once every five years, which explains why cancers recur at that interval (see **Figs. 124, 125**).

It is possible **to avoid the recurrence of cancer tumor in humans only by restoring all the levels of the affected cells to their normal structure**, characteristic of their cell type.

The following experiment provides an interesting illustration of these principles.

A culture of cancerous tissue was placed in one of two hermetically-sealed flasks, while a culture of normal, healthy tissue was placed in the other. The vessels

were positioned side by side in total darkness. (Recall that in the absence of sunlight the thickness of the barrier between physical, etheric, astral and other planes is minimal). After a short interval, the previously normal tissue was examined and found to be **cancerous**.

This is because cells of a primitive structure possess a considerably greater potential than those of more complex make-up. And so the more primitive cells always win out.

As shown by the above experiment, even in the absence of any interaction or physical contact, **the transformation of healthy cells into cancerous cells occurs** nevertheless.

Destruction of healthy cell structures on the astral and mental planes can also occur as a result of strong emotional stress, mostly negative, when the astral body becomes overloaded with energy beyond its critical stress threshold.

Astral body structures start disintegrating at the weakest site, which eventually leads to the appearance of cancer cells. Therefore, cellular interaction can occur only through the other planetary levels, such as the astral and etheric, which is indeed what happens.

Moreover, hormones activating the process of cellular disintegration into their constituent types of primary matter can also energetically demolish the organism's cellular structure. It is particularly noticeable when there is a rapid buildup of hormonal concentration in the various organs of the body. This destroys the normal cellular architecture of the affected organs and triggers the development of cancer.

In addition to breaching the defense system and draining off energy (energy vampirism), there are several other ways of impacting the physical body from the etheric and lower astral planes of the planet.

How would these manifest?

If, by chance, a person has a weakened protective psi-field, not only can he be pierced, but actually penetrated by another spirit. Moreover, both human as well as non-human spirits from the astral plane may invade in this way.

Let us explore what happens in more detail.

During a full moon, the negative effects of the energy flux from the astral to the etheric plane are at their peak; this causes a further suppression of an already depleted psi defense, and, in extreme cases, may wipe it out entirely. When psi-field protection is either weakened or absent, the physical body is susceptible to invasion not only by a human spirit but also by any other spirit from the etheric or lower astral planes (see [Figs. 126, 127, 128](#)).

Furthermore, such a spirit can take over another's physical body either temporarily or permanently. In the latter case, the “host” spirit can be either completely blocked by the invader or immobilized, as in death.

While inhabiting the physical body of its “alien” host, the intruder finds **the**

means to gratify all its needs and inclinations. We may liken the physical body to a set of clothes that a person sheds before retiring and dons again in the morning... And if someone wore your clothes while you were sleeping, did whatever he pleased in them and returned them in the morning, you would have no way of knowing what he did in your clothes in the interim that you were asleep. And if someone spots your clothes on the interloper and later tells you he saw someone wearing your clothes and doing all manner of things, it would hit you like a bombshell!..

This actually happens to be a fairly commonplace occurrence for people with psychic disorders.

Another intriguing example of this is the following:

It concerns a young woman of very strict morals who led a chaste life and totally avoided sexual contact with men. Every evening she quietly retired and every morning awoke with absolutely no awareness of anything that had transpired. However, when her spirit left her body during sleep, another female spirit, of entirely opposite moral fabric, invaded her vacated physical body... “Donning” this body, the interloper-spirit ventured out on the town to engage in an orgy of sex. In the morning she deposited the body in its usual place, just before the rightful owner returned... The native spirit, upon re-entry, was entirely unaware of the body's nocturnal activities during her absence. Then, one day, she discovered she had become pregnant. One can only imagine what she must have felt after learning the news!... Or how she must have wondered what “holy” spirit had done this to her!...

A word about **sleep-walking**...

The phenomenon of so-called **somnambulism** is an **incomplete possession of a physical body by another spirit**, whereby the invader cannot completely take over someone else's brain and gain control over all the brain and bodily functions. It affects only the primitive structures of the brain, which manifest in the unconscious, automaton-like movements of sleep-walkers.

If the spirit of an astral creature invades a susceptible physical body, the latter will behave according to the life habits of the intruder. And if **in its own** physical body and prior life it preyed on or devoured animals, **the “preempted” body will behave exactly the same**, in so far as the capacity of the human body enables it to do so (see [Figs. 129, 130, 131](#)).

This is exactly how humans become “**werewolves**”. Certainly the human body does not change into the image and likeness of an astral creature's spirit; only his actions are under control of the creature.

The capacity to see invading spirits belongs to only a few individuals whose brains possess a qualitative structure that enables it to receive information (including auditory and visual) emanating from other levels of the planet.

Furthermore, it is no accident that – universally – down through the ages a physical body is described as **reverting to human, once a werewolf is destroyed**. The truth behind the legend is that an astral creature cannot remain in a dead, destroyed

physical body.

Let us now examine other situations which lead to the collapse or exhaustion of the human protective psi-field.

Alcohol – ethyl alcohol to be more precise – **possesses a powerful negative energy**. The etheric structure of ethyl alcohol is very dynamic and exerts a powerful influence on the human **etheric body**. This is one of the reasons why a person in a drunken state is so much weaker than when he is sober. Alcoholic beverages have one feature that happens to be the precise source of their addictive properties: they contain, among other ingredients, the simplest sugars, glucose and fructose, which undergo rapid absorption directly into the bloodstream, producing thereby a surge of positive energy.

But ethyl alcohol actually has the effect of producing inertia in an organism. Its negative structure becomes activated only several hours after ingestion in cases where the subject's liver can no longer neutralize it.

The liver itself produces fermentation which breaks down ethyl alcohol, and also contains a certain amount of fermentation naturally. Actually, ethyl alcohol itself is a by-product of complex sugar fermentation, and that is what triggers the liver to produce ferments – though not, of course, for the specific purpose of breaking down the alcohol which a person consumes.

Ultimately, after several hours of concentrated work, the human liver becomes exhausted in the process of producing fermentation as described above. The unprocessed residue **has a very adverse effect on the subject's etheric body, flooding it with negative energy and disrupting the harmony of the spirit's structural foundation**. This leads to a **severe reduction in the protective psi-field's density**.

Very often, after an all-night binge, a person is totally depleted, knocked-out, dizzy and nauseated and suffers from an intermittent urge to vomit. (Vomiting happens to be still another defense reaction of the organism, activated when the liver is no longer capable of breaking down the alcohol. The brain then triggers stomach and intestinal spasms aimed at cleaning out whatever remains.) Thanks to this mechanism a certain portion of the residual alcohol is expelled.

A psychological factor also plays a role here: In the throes of a morning hangover, the imbibor recalls how well he felt after taking a drink; so his natural inclination is to reach for more alcohol. Thus a vicious cycle begins – everything is repeated over and over again. If this persists indefinitely (different time periods for different users), a state of severe **alcoholic intoxication** ensues.

At this stage the abuser's protective field becomes increasingly thinner, beckoning the astral vampires to close in on a lavish feast. The victim's organism rapidly starts to age and fall apart... Eventually, owing to the long history of abuse, the subject's organism is totally incapable of neutralizing alcohol. The alcohol concentration starts building up in the brain, finally reaching a critical level that starts killing off the cerebral neurons. At this point the brain resorts to an extreme measure, exhausting its energy potential in the process: it opens up its neuronal structures to other spirit lev-

els for which they are totally unprepared.

Energy currents from the higher mental planes now pass through the spirit bodies and start to break down the alcohol. However, since the cerebral neurons at this developmental stage are not prepared for such a process, their already developed astral and rudimentary mental bodies undergo progressive destruction.

This is indeed an extreme measure on the part of the brain – but it is the only way the organism and the spirit may have a chance to survive and regain, to a greater or lesser degree, a normal state. This is possible only once or – at the very most – twice in a person's life. However, further frequent replays of the above lead to rapid destruction of the mental body's foundation, followed by total annihilation of the astral body as well. That is precisely why **an alcoholic's brain post mortem looks exactly like that of a newborn, or sometimes even that of an embryo: virtually smooth all over, with the cortical convolutions totally “ironed out”**. Such a brain is actually undergoing a process of reverse evolution.

Interestingly, the moment a brain opens in this way, it becomes receptive to the other planetary planes. The subject starts seeing imps (he has literally drunk his way into hell) and other unsightly creatures... In this condition the subject is actually seeing astral beasts that are indeed ugly and even more repugnant than demons.

A word about demons... During the age of dinosaurs, there was one particular species (now also extinct) that walked up-right, had three well-developed fingers and upper extremities resembling hands; also an analogous pair of three-toed feet, a tail and a human-looking cranium, with huge eyes and a beak-shaped mouth. Some of these creatures even had corneal excrescences – horns!... Is this not a complete and detailed picture of the reputed demons that roast sinners in hell?... Intriguing, is it not?

Disanopithecus is the official name given this extinct species by paleontologists.

And so, a severely intoxicated subject can see the astral creatures who are trying to destroy the remainder of his protective psi-field and make a banquet of his energy.

Naturally such a subject tries to hide or ward off the attacking “predators”. To someone not so afflicted these antics seem quite bizarre... Especially when the subject starts showing the observer in which corners the monsters are lurking... In medical parlance this condition is called “delirium tremens” and the visions are considered **hallucinations**.

Interestingly enough, the so-called “hallucinations” show a property common to all subjects experiencing “delirium tremens” (thousands, or even millions, if we consider mankind's history): regardless of the epoch, race, culture, beliefs or education – **all have seen the same scenarios and behave in the same way**. So it would appear that such “hallucinations”, oddly enough, turn out to be unchanging and invariable.

Of course, we may theorize that people of yore heard all about the horrors of hell from childhood admonitions and priestly sermons, and that the power of sugges-

tion stimulated their sick fantasies and visions of fearful entities. But why do modern non-believers, in a state of “delirium tremens”, see the same “demons” that beset their grandfathers and great-grandfathers? These are certainly no hallucinations.

A subject in the throes of delirium tremens actually sees real creatures from the etheric and lower astral Earth levels. Unfortunately no one can offer a correct explanation of this phenomenon.

Let us now consider the effect of **drugs**.

Drugs are even more devastating than alcohol to the human organism, owing to certain properties peculiar to them.

Drugs are organic substances possessing powerful etheric structures and markedly negative energy. After consumption they make rapid entry into the bloodstream. And when the concentration of poison reaches a critical point, the spirit opens up the brain neurons on the higher mental level in order to break down the toxins. The neuronal structures on the lower levels begin to disintegrate rapidly as the energy currents from the higher levels start to penetrate them. Concomitantly the narcotics themselves undergo disintegration by the energy currents emanating from the higher mental levels. The subject feels as if he is in a state of grace as he sees and hears things on other levels of reality, experiencing sensations like never before in his life.

Thus, progressively and irresistibly he is drawn – again and again – to relive the state of bliss he has experienced. However, to again re-open the brain the subject must resort to higher and higher dosages of the drugs... Once again the brain opens up and suffers even more severe damage to its structures – and the next opening requires an even larger dose... The final outcome is the irrevocable ruin of both the organism and the spirit.

Any attempt to open up the brain before it is developmentally ready is like trying to force a young flower bud to open up before its time – the flower wilts and dies and the sight of its beauty is lost forever.

It is only through **a harmonious and orderly evolution that the brain can develop the structures of the higher mental plane and achieve the flowering of the LOTUS**... It is then that energies from higher mental structures start flowing through the physical and spiritual bodies, imparting to the subject far richer sensations and capacities than narcotics ever could. When the brain and spirit have attained such a development, man is capable – by the power of thought – through his psi-field – to influence the processes unfolding in nature and society. He can freely travel through time and space as well as see and influence the past, present and future – and much, much more.

This is no hypothesis or supposition. I have personally developed a method for evolving the human spirit and human brain structures to such a level. I discovered how to do this by using my own energy, my own potential. About five hundred of my students who have undergone my training have achieved all or part of these proficiencies. Moreover, the evolutionary process continues for them even after completion of the training: those who had less gained more than they had before; those that

were highly endowed gained something they could never have dreamed possible.

I am not trying to make special claims that my method is best. Perhaps there are other paths for achieving the same results through self-evolution or some other approaches. My only reason for mentioning the subject is to try to deter those who are reaching out for drugs in order to see, hear and feel more... All that is possible without wrecking one's brain, without destroying one's spirit – on the contrary, it is achieved by **creating oneself**. And this is quite realistic. All it takes is **to desire it and to know how to make it possible**. That, in turn, takes knowledge, knowledge and more knowledge... true knowledge of the laws of nature... the knowledge of processes unfolding within ourselves and all around us... **Then much of the impossible becomes possible** for us.

Now let us return to the human brain and how it gets opened up on other levels.

Often the brain opens up under the impact of very strong emotional blows or stress. Such emotions, coming from the astral plane, implode the brain; they can open up a developmentally-unprepared brain and start discharging energy and information through it. Being unready in development or structure, the brain is overwhelmed by a mass of information it cannot assimilate... Such overloading disrupts the neuronal functions and renders the brain incapable of adequately processing the incoming information. **The brain is clearly unable to build a complete and orderly mosaic of comprehension**. It descends into chaos – even when each piece of the mosaic is in accordance with the truth.

Opening up a brain in this way may lead to schizophrenia of varying degrees of severity and duration... Overloading of the brain also leads to destruction of the subject's psi-field and the possibility of progressive illness on both the physical and spiritual levels.

There is still another interesting aspect of the spirit's impact on the human organism and psyche...

At the moment of conception, the spirit enters the fertilized ovum... There are no problems when a male spirit enters a biomass with a male genetic structure, or a female spirit takes residence in a genetically female biomass. The spirit gradually elaborates a new physical body for itself and continues its development.

However, a spirit's entry through a channel opening at the moment of conception depends on harmony between the qualitative structure of the energy during the explosive surge, or “splash”, and the level the spirit happens to inhabit. And quite often a situation arises where **a female spirit enters a biomass with a male genetic structure**... (see [Fig. 132](#)). What happens, then, in this case?... Initially the spirit starts developing just like any other. However, its subsequent development and aspect will be somewhat different.... After birth, the human body possesses a huge energy potential, whereas the spirit, conversely, has lost some of its potential in the process of elaborating the physical body (see [Fig. 65](#)). Therefore, during the restoration of the etheric body's potential, the physical body is dominant over the spirit (see [Fig. 132](#)).

The spirit's behavior matches the characteristics of the male genetic structure: a

boy of this type may be gentler, more impressionable, more emotional, in the light of what we think of as typical masculine behavior. He also tends to be less physically strong.

Upon completion of the etheric body's restoration, the spirit's astral body begins to develop, reaching maturation between the ages of 14-18 years.

As the astral body develops, the spirit's potential keeps increasing while concomitantly the physical body's potential declines (see [Fig. 133](#)). But, if by chance, the physical body's potential becomes equal to the spirit's (especially during the window of astral development, from 14-18 years of age), **the spirit would then be in a position to dominate the physical shell under the impact of emotional stress**. Once it assumes dominance, the behavior and needs of the female spirit prevail. Meanwhile, such males undergo shifts in their hormonal system, including an increase in pituitary size over and beyond that of normal male development. However, if there is no such shift at this critical time, the male physical body wins out over the spirit's position.

A second dangerous period is **at ages 33-36, when the spirit is evolving its mental structures** (see [Fig. 134](#)). If, at this crucial time, the female spirit does not prevail, the physical body will take on masculine behavior and certain special characteristics.

Currently, as more and more children are being born with deficient immune systems and diminished potential of their physical bodies, the probability of such “changes” has significantly increased. This explains the apparent explosion of homosexuality nowadays. Incidentally, statistics show that the majority became homosexuals between the ages of 14-18 years or 33-36 years of age.

Let us now explore the opposite situation – that is, **the entry of a male spirit into a genetically female biomass** (see [Fig. 135](#)).

Initially everything develops as usual, albeit with certain peculiarities. Such a girl is usually much more physically active than her friends, somewhat of a tomboy and may prefer boys as playmates. The physical body may tend to be more masculine in its development.

The danger period occurs between 16-20 years of age as the male astral body develops (see [Fig. 136](#)). A second dangerous period is at ages 30-33, when the spirit is evolving its mental structures (see [Fig. 137](#)). In the latter case, the male spirit predominates and the female will feel like a man (lesbianism).

It is also possible for **two spirits to enter a fertilized egg simultaneously**. When this occurs, the spirits are usually at different higher and lower developmental levels, respectively. If a genetically male biomass receives two spirits, one male and one female, the female predominates until, during the critical periods from age **14-20** and **30-33** years of age, the possibility of a reversal occurs, i.e., the male spirit prevails (see [Figs. 136, 139, 140](#)).

Similarly, with a simultaneous entry of male and female spirits into a genetically female biomass, there is a risk of the male spirit's prevailing between the ages of **16-**

20 and **30-33** (see **Figs. 141, 142, 143**). When, however, a spirit genetically and sexually identical to the biomass takes over, the chance of homosexuality is virtually nil.

Replacement of the spirit of one sex by a spirit of the opposite sex is also a possibility in the periods between **16-20** and **30-33**, when the development of the spirit's astral and mental bodies, respectively, is in progress. Additionally, there are cases of multiple spirits inhabiting one body simultaneously, with periodic dominance of one or the other of these. Such cases, however, are extremely rare.

We could elaborate indefinitely on the variety and versatility of nature as it manifests in the living... However, to encompass the whole picture, we must include all the processes unfolding in non-living nature as well...

Chapter 10. The unity of microcosmic and macrocosmic laws in the universe

Our solar system arose as a consequence of the space curvature created by the birth of our star – the sun.

During the birth of a star the curvature and dimension of its surrounding space undergo distortion – change. This process, in turn, sets up the necessary conditions for the synthesis of matter within the region of curvature. The condensation of the substance gives rise to the creation of planets in the areas of altered dimension.

Our planet Earth was created by the progressive synthesis of seven forms of matter (see Ch. 1, Vol. I). **Six material spheres** were formed as a result of that synthesis. These spheres were qualitatively related to each other by virtue of their possessing greater or lesser amounts of elements in common (see **Figs. 11, 12, 12a**, Vol. I).

The physically dense sphere, popularly known as planet Earth, consists of substances we differentiate into four aggregate states: **solid, liquid, gaseous, and plasma**. Plasma is a critical state of physically solid substance in that, although stable over time, it can undergo loss of stability and destruction. The nuclei of the plasma ions start disintegrating into their component types of matter: As the atom disintegrates – from whatever the cause – it loses electrons, thereby triggering a change in its microcosmic dimension.

When the above change equals $\Delta\lambda'_1$ ($\Delta\lambda'_1 \approx 0,020203236...$) the nucleus becomes unstable and disintegrates. However, before delving further into micro- and macrospace, let us examine the nature of an atom and see how various atoms impact their microcosm.

A hydrogen atom is the simplest in structure and affects its microcosm minimally (see Vol. I, **Fig. 13**) **Transuranium elements have the greatest impact on their microcosmic dimension.**

The change caused by the transuranium nuclei is about equal to $\Delta\lambda'_1 \approx -0,020203236...$. In general, quite minimal changes in the external environment are sufficient to trigger the disintegration of these atoms into simpler, more stable elements.

How, then, do the hydrogen and transuranium elements differ in their impact on their respective microcosmic dimensions?

The nucleus of a hydrogen atom (atomic weight of 1) effects the smallest change in the curvature and dimension of its microspace, which, in turn, gives rise to a secondary decrease in its microcosmic dimension by a value of

$$\Delta\lambda'_H \approx -0,00008597... \text{ (see Fig. 144).}$$

Transuranium nuclei also effect a secondary decrease in their microcosmic dimension of

$$\Delta\lambda'_{tr.ur.elem.} \approx -0,020203236...$$

(tr.ur.elem. – transuranium elements)

And it takes only a minor external influence to cause the opening of a qualitative barrier between the physical and etheric planes of the planet, which triggers the process of atomic disintegration and initiates the overflow of their constituent primary matters onto the etheric plane (see [Fig. 145](#)):

$$|\Delta\lambda'_{\text{tr.ur.elem.}} + \Delta E| \geq \Delta\lambda = 0,020203236...$$

Thus, **every single atom – according to its atomic weight – affects its microcosmic dimension to a greater or lesser degree, which also leads to a secondary decrease in the dimension of its microspace.**

The deformation of space does not only occur in the region of an atomic nucleus. Therefore, although a given nucleus deforms the space around it, the resulting change alone is not enough to initiate the synthesis of substance from the seven forms of primary matter.

A space curvature may arise with the potential for merging **six forms of matter**, but for the fusion of seven types of matter, a further minor change in microcosmic curvature is required. The dimension of these areas varies within a range of

$$2,9800 < \lambda < 3,00017$$

In order to produce an electron, the following dimension is required:

$$3,0001 < \lambda_{\text{el}} < 3,00017$$

In the latter case, the seventh form of matter also merges with the other six, but the fusion is very unstable. Minor changes in the external environment can easily disrupt such a combination. That is precisely why an electron manifests both as a particle and as a wave (dual characteristics).

Hence, an electron is continuously undergoing both a synthesis and disintegration of its substance – a process that produces electron clouds, manifesting in several different forms: **S**-cloud, **P**-cloud, **D**-cloud and **F**-cloud. Each differs from the others in its spatial configuration, which, in turn, affects the properties of the electrons and makes possible a variety of spatial combinations.

As atoms combine into molecules or form crystal lattices, the electron clouds of different atoms create a common system that is significantly more stable than before. Such systems consist of two electrons, each possessing a different spin. This is due to the different types of curvature of their microspace dimension, which deflect space in two opposite directions – equivalent to a balance level. The electronic structure of the nearby atoms merge into a shared closed system. The outer electron shells are not sufficiently filled in to make for a state of balance: an atom possessing an odd number of outer-shell electrons lacks stability.

Whenever atoms join in a shared system, each pair of atoms contributes one “free” electron toward the setup of a shared stable system. Conventionally, an electron revolving clockwise around the nucleus is designated as having a **positive spin**, while a counterclockwise revolution denotes a **negative spin** (see [Figs. 146, 146a](#),

147).

Atoms which form crystal lattices become more stable when joined to molecules. Of particular significance are the crystal lattices composed of atoms.

Different types of crystal lattices, each possessing distinctive electron systems, may be classified into three separate groups: **conductors**, **semiconductors** and **insulators**. The difference in their properties depends upon the degree of strength of their electron structures.

In general, **conductors have unstable electron structures; they tend to keep combining and dissociating**. Their entire system is in motion – albeit this type of motion is **chaotic**. Interestingly enough, however, electrons do not move inside a conductor. The external (electromagnetic) field deforms the atom's microspace curvature, increasing the electrons' instability and triggering their disintegration. This results in the overflow of their constituent primary matters onto the etheric level, where, still under the influence of the external field, they are forced to flow in a given direction.

In the process of this forced overflow, the primary matters lose a portion of their energy, which leads to a new fusion of primary matters in still another area of the atom's microcosmic curvature – hence the synthesis of a new electron takes place.

Thus, **the movement of electrons along a conductor is really a periodic back-and-forth flow from physical to etheric and etheric to physical levels**.

This also accounts for the so-called **tunnel effect**, which occurs when crystal lattices of various types join together (as in the case of semiconductors), when correct external conditions are present; i.e., when the distance between the point of disintegration and the point of electron synthesis falls within the range of a fraction of a millimeter to several millimeters. When this occurs, that particular interval marks the “still zone” – where the flow of primary matters from physical to etheric levels does not occur.

The above condition arises when there is a marked difference between the electron structures of the crystal lattices that make up a semiconductor (see [Fig. 148](#)).

Some very interesting phenomena, endo- and exothermic reactions, accompany the formation of molecules by various atoms. They occur during molecular buildup when the atoms' electrons either absorb or radiate thermal energy from its microspace.

This is also related to the following circumstance: several atoms cannot unite to form a common electron system unless their outer electrons all possess similar energy levels. Otherwise it would be **impossible** for them to elaborate common electron pairs – nor could they, for that matter, even form molecules (see [Figs. 149,150](#)).

Absorption of thermal energy leads to greater electron instability, which, in many instances, makes it impossible for atoms to combine into molecules, or into shared systems.

This is because as atoms heat up they lose electrons, actively disintegrate and

become ions. Also at those higher thermal levels, when the atoms lose their electrons, their nuclei also become unstable, making them prone to disintegration.

Thus, **as atoms combine into molecules, crystal lattices are produced as a result of a change in the microcosmic dimension of these atoms, triggered by external or other influences. The merging becomes possible only when such curvatures of atomic microspace occur in the presence of outer-shell electrons possessing opposite-direction spins.**

$$3,00010 < \lambda_{\text{el.}}^- < 3,00017.$$

$$3,00017 < \lambda_{\text{el.}}^+ < 3,00024.$$

It appears obvious, then, that both atomic nuclei and atomic combinations impart changes in microcosmic dimension. At least this is what occurs on a microcosmic level. What, then, happens in **the macrocosm**?

How often has man gazed at the nocturnal skies, at the shimmering milky way – contemplating eternity... infinity.

How often does he wonder what orders the universe what holds it aloft... Whence come the stars? How do they wax and wane? And what is the nature of those stars – that surely so many have yearned to touch – if only in their dreams?

Many theories about the origin of the universe have emerged – which failed to stand the test of time – only to be replaced by others.

And even the most correct theories have failed to explain a number of natural phenomena in the universe. The main stumbling block in all of them appears to be the question of black holes.

A black hole is a fairly constant region in space that absorbs all matter coming within its domain – its sphere of influence.

Black holes absorb matter, but radiate nothing – an apparent **violation of** a cardinal law of physics – **the Law of Conservation of Matter**. Actually, the opposite happens to be the case, for these phenomena actually confirm that this fundamental, universal law does exist in nature – and is not a figment of someone's imagination.

An apparent contradiction arises only because the current models of the universe are **incomplete**, and consequently unable to offer an adequate idea of the processes unfolding in nature.

How, then, can we account for what is really happening?

What man observes with his own eyes or instruments – and calls “the universe” – is just an infinitesimal part of the structural totality of spaces of different dimensions – a closed-circuit, internally balanced system; and that, in turn, is just a fragment of still another totality of spaces, and so on, and so on... Let us now call this first structural union of varying dimensional spaces a **metauniverse** and scrutinize it more closely.

Parallel to our own space-universe exist others possessing a different dimension from ours.

Ours has a dimension of $\lambda_7 = 3,00017$. This value is consistent with conditions for the fusion of the seven types of matter that comprise the sum total of our universe.

To enable the fusion of an additional primary matter, the so-called Tmatrix spaceY would have to change in dimension by a value of

$$\Delta\lambda = 0,020203236...$$

(Of course we cannot speak of the mergence of “half” a primary matter with whole primary matters, no more than we can speak of half a man)...

For each consecutive fusion of primary matter, a dimension change of a specific value is required. Therefore, a matrix space whose dimensionality is non-uniform allows **the creation of space universes** in zones which have conditions supporting the fusion of whole-number primary matters.

Quantization²⁴ occurs in the matrix space dimension, just as it does at the electron levels of an atom.

Therefore, in separate regions of matrix space, the synthesis of various amounts of whole-number primary matters is constantly unfolding.

Each region of space in the universe is **non-uniform** in its dimensionality, so there occurs a linking up of these non-uniformities: That is, two space-universes of different dimensionality join together in these zones.

Let us consider three of the nearest space universes, with the following dimensions (see [Fig. 151](#)):

$$\lambda_6 = 2,979966764,$$

$$\lambda_7 = 3,00017 \text{ (our universe)}$$

$$\lambda_8 = 3,020373236.$$

The joining of various space-universes, then, takes place within the zones of non-uniform dimensionality (see [Fig. 152, 153, 154](#)).

At the linkage site of λ_8 and λ_7 , a channel develops between them (just as it does between the nuclei of cells). Through that channel, primary matters from λ_8 start flowing over to λ_7 ; however, a qualitative difference exists between the substances of λ_8 and λ_7 . Therefore, at the linkage site, substance from λ_8 disintegrates, while substance from λ_7 is synthesized out of the disintegration by-products of λ_8 . Thus, substance composed of eight types of matter disintegrates, whereas substance composed of seven types of matter is synthesized. The zone where these space-universes are joined has a dimension in the range of

$$3,00017 < \lambda_{\text{mean.}} < 3,020373236$$

That is why the eighth type of matter released from λ_8 remains in this zone and cannot flow over to a parallel universe. Over time it accumulates in the linkage zone

²⁴ The restricting of a variable quantity to discrete values, each of which is an integral multiple of the same number.

and starts affecting, within a certain numerical range, the zone's dimension and curvature. This increases the channel between the space-universes and initiates a progressively greater withdrawal of substance with the dimensionality of λ_8 .

As a consequence, conditions arise causing part of the λ_7 substance to become unstable and start disintegrating into its constituent parts; this represents a so-called **thermonuclear reaction** and causes the stars to “**light up**” (see [Fig. 155](#), [156](#), [157](#), [158](#)).

Zones of non-uniformity can occur as either:

$\Delta\lambda > 0$ or $\Delta\lambda < 0$.

In the latter case, linkage occurs between space universes of λ_7 and λ_6 dimensionality. However, in this instance, λ_7 substance flows over into the λ_6 space.

This is how λ_7 space universes lose substance – and it happens to be precisely how the mysterious black holes appear (see [Fig. 159](#)). Herein lies the origin of stars and black holes – within the zones of non-uniform space. During that process, primary matters overflow between different space-universes.

Other λ_7 space-universes also exist, but their constituent substances are different from ours. When space universes of similar dimensionality but different composition join in zones of non-uniformity, a channel is created between them and a back-and-forth flow of substances ensues. This represents neither a star nor a black hole, but a **transition zone from one space to another**.

Let us designate such zones of non-uniform space as zero-transitions. Further, we may distinguish three types of transitions according to their $\Delta\lambda$ value:

Positive zero-transitions (stars), where substance flows to one space-universe from another of greater dimensionality:

$(\Delta\lambda > 0) \text{ n+}$

Negative zero-transitions, where one space-universe discharges substance to another of lesser dimensionality:

$(\Delta\lambda < 0) \text{ n-}$

Neutral zero-transitions, where substance flows in equal amounts in both directions, and the linked space-universes **are practically equal in dimensionality: n^0** (that is, there is no difference between them).

A closer analysis shows us that each space universe **gains** matter through the stars and **loses** it through the black holes.

To achieve stability, a space-universe must have a **balance** between incoming and outgoing matter... The Law of Conservation of Matter is only applicable where conditions of space stability exist. The latter can be formulated as follows:

$$\int_{(i)k}^+ m_{(i)k} dk + \int_{(ij)k}^0 m_{(ij)k}^0 dk \equiv \int_{(j)k}^- m_{(j)k} dk \quad (9)$$

where:

$\mathbf{n}_{(i)k}^+$ – is a positive zero-transition (a star);

$\mathbf{n}_{(ij)k}^0$ – is a neutral zero-transition;

$\mathbf{n}_{(j)k}^-$ – is a negative zero-transition (black hole);

$\mathbf{m}_{(i)k}$ – is a combined mass of primary matter flowing through through a star;

$\mathbf{m}_{(j)k}$ – is a combined mass of primary matter flowing through a given black hole into another space-universe.

Thus, in between space-universes of different dimensions – and through zones of non-uniformity – primary matter circulates between space-universes constituting a given system (see [Fig. 156](#))

The number of space-universes forming a closed-circuit balanced system may be different. therefore, we may more accurately depict equation (9) as follows:

$$\iint \mathbf{n}_{(i)k}^+ \mathbf{m}_{(i)k} d\mathbf{k} d\mathbf{i} + \iint \mathbf{n}_{(ij)k}^0 \mathbf{m}_{(ij)k}^0 d\mathbf{k} d(\mathbf{i}j) \equiv \iint \mathbf{n}_{(j)k}^- \mathbf{m}_{(j)k} d\mathbf{k} d\mathbf{j} \quad (10)$$

Through zones of non-uniform dimensionality (zero-transitions), it is possible to pass from one space-universe to another. When this occurs, inevitably substance from our space-universe gets transformed into that of the other space-universe: there is no way “our” matter can end up unchanged in the other space-universe.

The zones through which such a transition can occur are precisely **the black holes**, within which complete disintegration occurs, and also **the neutral zero-transitions**, where balanced matter exchange takes place.

Neutral zero-transitions may be **permanent** or **temporary**, and may occur periodically or spontaneously.

On Earth there are several areas where neutral zero-transitions occur. Ships, aircraft, small vessels or individuals entering such regions vanish without a trace. Among such areas are the Bermuda triangle, certain regions in the Himalayas and several others. It is virtually impossible to ascertain at what point or into which space any substance winds up after exposure to the effect of zero-transition – let alone predict the probability of its returning, which is practically nil. Therefore, it is impossible to implement purposeful space travel through such channels.

No less exciting – is the origin and **evolution of the stars**.

Newborn stars (novas) can be gigantic – exceeding the dimensions of an entire solar system (the Tblue giantsY). The initial density of such stars is not very high (see [Fig. 157](#)). Over time, as a result of thermonuclear reactions, their atoms keep losing electrons and finally disintegrate.

Initially, such stars lose their single atoms – hydrogen, helium, etc. – so that their substance increasingly consists of heavy element atoms. As the star shrinks, it becomes increasingly denser and heavier, resulting in a progressively greater and greater impact on the spatial dimensionality.

If early in its evolution a star possesses a macroscopic dimension equal to

$$3,00017 < \lambda_a < 3,020373236.$$

then, upon compression, it causes a secondary space deformation of $\Delta\lambda < 0$. This, in turn, results in a macrospace dimension of:

$$3,00017 < (\lambda_a - \Delta\lambda) < 3,020373236$$

$$3,00017 < \lambda_b < 3,02037323,$$

where $\Delta\lambda$ may, initially, fluctuate within a range of

$$0 < \Delta\lambda < 0,020203236...$$

Gradually the secondary deformation of the macrospace dimension (due to the star's density) becomes even further pronounced, causing the macrospace dimension to approximate the value of λ_7 . As this proceeds, the channel between the λ_8 and λ_7 space-universe diminishes. The flow of matter from λ_7 becomes progressively less.

Concomitantly the star's radiation activity keeps waning until it ceases altogether. This marks **the death of the star**. It grows dimmer and dimmer and finally fades away... (see [Fig. 158, 159](#)).

By contrast, a star may start out with a huge mass (sixfold that of the sun); then, as it wanes, it may trigger a secondary deformation of its macrospace dimension, causing it to dip below the value of λ_7 :

$$\Delta\lambda \approx 0.0102018...$$

$$\lambda_6 < \lambda_d < \lambda_7; \quad \lambda_d = \lambda_a - \Delta\lambda$$

The result is an opposite deflection, and a so-called **neutron star** is born (see [Fig. 158](#)).

If, initially, the star had a mass greater than tenfold the mass of the sun, the secondary deformation becomes so great as to establish the linkage between space-universes λ_7 and λ_6 (see [Fig. 159](#)).

When this occurs, matter from λ_7 starts flowing over to λ_6 , resulting in the formation of a black hole. Thus, black holes emerge in the course of the evolution of stars.

Now let us consider how planetary systems are formed.

At the onset of its life span, a star shows a balance between its size, the channel connecting λ_8 and λ_7 , and the amount of substance flowing through it from space-universe λ_8 (see [Fig. 160](#)). As a result of thermonuclear reactions leading to the loss of simple atoms, the star's dimension diminishes. It becomes unable to permit passage of the entire mass of primary matters flowing through it from space-universe λ_8 en

route to λ_7 .

This imbalance tends to increase over time – ultimately reaching a critical level. A tremendous explosion occurs, scattering some of the star's substance into the surrounding space. Concomitantly the macrospace dimension immediately around the star decreases, and a channel is formed providing passage for whatever matter the star can let through (see [Fig. 161](#)).

Astronomers call this **the explosion of a supernova**.

Upon exploding, the star mostly loses its lighter, higher layers composed of hydrogen, helium and other of the simpler elements. To a much lesser extent it undergoes loss of its heavier atoms.

The explosion results in a deformation of space over relatively vast distances – several astronomic units. However, an atom's nucleus most strongly deforms the space curvature immediately surrounding it: therefore, as the deformation recedes from the nucleus, it continues to diminish. Thus, during a supernova explosion, spatial deformation becomes more manifest as it recedes from the exploded star (see [Fig. 162](#)).

Additionally, the star's outer layers, discharged at the explosion, form a **gaseous nebula**, which, over time, gives rise to the formation of planets. A salient fact is – **the closer to the star a planet is born, the higher its density and the greater its ratio of heavy atoms. Conversely, the farther away from the parent star it happens to emerge, the lower the density and the greater its proportion of “light” atoms, or elements – e.g., hydrogen, oxygen, water, etc.** (see [Fig. 163, 164](#)).

Let us now return to the system jointly formed by a group of space-universes which differ in dimensionality.

Note that their birth place – their matrix space – is not uniform in all directions. This leads to conditions such that the dimensionality of each space-universe undergoes gradual deformation, to varying degrees in all different directions. Quantization of π -dimensional matrix space then takes place. As a result, the space-universes form a closed-circuit, balanced system (see [Fig. 165](#)), in which one space-universe, as its dimension decreases, transits into another space-universe. In regions where the dimension drop becomes critical, they merge into a single whole! And there they happen to possess a dimension equivalent to:

$$\lambda_2 = 2,878950584...$$

Our metauniverse happens to consist of nine types of matter. The number of possible combinations is **459**. Since the minimal number of interactive primary matters must be no less than two, we obtain our figure from the following formula:

$$\Sigma C_n^m = n!/m!(m-n) \quad (11)$$

where:

$$n = 9; 2 \leq m \leq 9.$$

While all of the above is valid, our metauniverse actually consists of 300 space-universes, which means that there are “vacant” zones of matrix space. This tells us that our metauniverse is incomplete and still in the process of formation, as well as potentially subject to the influence of other space systems. Our metauniverse happens to be just one finished part – and infinitesimal at that – of what is called **the Great Cosmos**.

Before examining the next spatial system, we should like to stress the following: Space-universes composed of two or three forms of matter happen to be especially unstable, and their structure seems to have a proclivity for increased activity. By contrast, those synthesized from nine forms of matter are the most stable and inert. That is why most “vacant” spots in the cosmos are associated with λ_2 and λ_3 space-universes.

Chapter 11. Matrix space: the formation of super spaces

Matrix space – what is it?

Before we advance further in our grasp of the macrocosm, let us try to shed some light on this concept.

In order for the mergence of our type of primary matter to occur, a space dimension must change by a specific value that exactly matches the value of the Great Cosmos type of matter – i.e.:

$$\Delta\lambda = 0,020203236...$$

The next change in dimension by that value, $\Delta\lambda$, potentiates the fusion of still another type of matter, which very closely fits into the “Procrustean bed” of that space dimension's coefficient of quantization. With the progressive change (quantization) of space dimension by a value of $\Delta\lambda$, consecutive types of matter become capable of merging and creating various types of space-universes. (This phenomenon was partially addressed in Ch. 10).

Thus, there is **a category of primary matters of a certain kind capable of synthesizing substance in accordance with a corresponding change in space dimension of $\Delta\lambda$ for each of its types.**

The synthesis of these forms of matter leads in turn to the creation of a system of spaces – thanks to the fact that the coefficient $\Delta\lambda$ can assume a variety of values. However, if a value deviates by even an insignificant amount from the requisite figure, our type of primary matter would be unable to merge and would therefore disintegrate.

With a different value of $\Delta\lambda$, conditions arise for the fusion of another type of primary matter – different from ours – leading to the creation of a qualitatively distinct system of spaces: **A different matrix space is thus created.**

As a result, we have a whole system of matrix spaces that differ from one another with respect to their space dimension's quantization coefficient and according to the types of their constituent primary matters. This is reflected in the qualitative differences of the substances stemming from the mergence of various types of matter, as well as in their quantitative differences – that is, in the varying amounts that constitute each of these types.

Every matrix space is **non-uniform in dimension**. Such fluctuations in dimensionality lead to merging with matrix spaces of similar dimensionality in the same regions. Zones of matter having a dimension coefficient γ of flow from their own matrix space over to another which is just in the process of formation. Furthermore, in the case of stars and black holes, if their creation is determined only by the quantity of primary matters which comprise the space-universes in the mergence zone (see Ch. 10) and by the fact that all these primary matters are of one type (i.e., quantizable by

a dimension coefficient $\gamma = 0,020203236\dots$), the following occurs: During the merging of the matrix spaces, zones of primary matter currents are created, possessing different coefficients γ_i for each of the different types of matter, which, therefore **cannot be compatible with each other under any circumstances**. What happens, then, in these zones of matrix space mergence?

What transpires, actually, is that within such zones, **both the initial and subsequent types of matter disintegrate, releasing “free” primary matters from each**. So then, we may wonder – what happens next?

Actually, there are three conditions influencing the processes unfolding in these zones:

1) The first is the amount of primary matters which comprise each matrix space in the mergence zone. Most often, each matrix space has a different amount. This, in turn, orchestrates a different pattern of primary matter currents in the overall composite – giving rise to a back-and-forth flow from one matrix space to another.

Two counter-currents are thus generated, creating powerful vortical flows of the two types of matter in their zone of intersection. Once this occurs, the stronger current will entrain the weaker one, thereby generating a powerful vortical geyser of the two types of primary matter.

2) The dimension of their matrix-space mergence zone will also affect the strength of the primary matter currents.

Naturally the above dimension cannot coincide with that of both matrix spaces, but can approximate quite closely that of one or the other types:

$$|\lambda'_1 - \lambda'_{12}| < |\lambda'_2 - \lambda'_{12}| \quad (12)$$

In other words, a dimension gradient arises within the matrix-space mergence zones – different for each matrix space. Moreover, the sign – either positive or negative – of the gradient is very crucial. For example, a negative slope indicates conditions favorable for the outflow of primary matters from a given matrix space.

3) The third condition governing these cosmic processes is the degree to which the quantization of the matrix space dimension approximates that of the matrix-space mergence zones:

$$\begin{aligned} |\lambda'_1 - \lambda'_{12}| / \lambda'_1 &< 0 \\ |\lambda'_2 - \lambda'_{12}| / \lambda'_2 &> 0 \end{aligned} \quad (13)$$

or

$$\begin{aligned} |\lambda'_1 - \lambda'_{12}| / \lambda'_1 &> 0 \\ |\lambda'_2 - \lambda'_{12}| / \lambda'_2 &< 0 \end{aligned}$$

It is also necessary for the mergence zone dimension to approximate the quantization coefficient of the λ'_1 or λ'_2 dimensions. In such cases, if, for example, the dimensional difference between $\Delta\lambda'_{12}$ and the quantization coefficient γ is greater than zero, the primary matters having the dimension of type λ'_2 undergo disintegration.

$$|\Delta\lambda'_{12} - a\gamma'_1| \rightarrow 0$$

if

$$|\Delta\lambda'_{12} - b\gamma'_2| \rightarrow 0$$

Primary matters of type λ'_1 dimension disintegrate.

if

$$(\Delta\lambda'_{12} - b\gamma'_2) < 0$$

this leads to the synthesis of primary matters of type λ'_2 dimension. And the opposite is also true:

$$\text{if } (\Delta\lambda'_{12} - a\gamma'_2) < 0$$

Primary matters of type λ'_1 dimension synthesis occur.

In other words, in the mergence zone, **synthesis of primary matters of either of the two types of matrix spaces can occur at the expense of the other types of matters which disintegrate**. As the synthesis proceeds, primary matters of an intermediate dimension type can be assimilated, and the intermediate matter, which is released as a result, causes instability in matrix spaces having a quantization coefficient of:

γ_1 or γ_2 – depending upon the direction of the primary matter flow.

This is reminiscent in nature of the exothermic and endothermic reactions occurring on the microcosmic level, in the process of which heat is either absorbed from the surrounding space or released into it (see Ch. 10).

Let us return to the processes unfolding in the mergence zone of two matrix spaces ...

Depending upon how the three conditions described above interact in the mergence zone of the two matrix spaces – a zone of a given type of matter is either synthesized or disintegrated.

The first case gives rise to a center of creation of space-universes with a specific type of quantization of their space dimension (the superanalog of a star – see [Fig. 166](#)).

The second case leads to the disintegration of a center of space universes with a specific type of space dimension quantization (the superanalog of a black hole).

As this occurs, the synthesized forms of matter of a given type of dimensional quantization start accumulating in the matrix space mergence zones: If the mass of matter flowing out of the mergence zone is smaller than the mass of matter synthesized within the zone, an excess concentration of matter in the mergence zone results.

In time, this excess concentration becomes critical enough to start blocking the flow of matter into the zone and renders the zone dimensionality unstable.

A huge explosion ensues, and the excess concentration of synthesized matter is expelled from the mergence zone (see **Fig. 167**). As the matrix space dimension fluctuates within each zone, new space universes begin to form. From these newborn structures, **metauniverses** are created (see **Fig. 168**).

Naturally, with the movement away from the mergence zone, the matrix space undergoes an increase in amplitude of its inner dimensional fluctuations. This makes possible the mergence of several of their primary matters within one of these zones. Moreover, the further from the center of the matrix space mergence zone, the greater the amount of primary matters that arise capable of merging and synthesizing substance (see **Fig. 169**).

In the first zone from the center, two forms of matter merge to create **a metauniverse out of one space universe**. In the next zone, the fusion of three forms of matter creates **a metauniverse out of three space universes**. The fusion of four forms of matter produces **a metauniverse of seven space universes**, while the mergence of five, produces twenty-five; six – **sixty-six**; seven – **one hundred and nineteen**; eight – **two hundred and forty-six**; and nine – **four hundred and fifty-nine space universes**, all of which comprise a metauniverse in a given zone of inner dimensional fluctuation of a given matrix space.

The number of potentially possible space universes constituting a metauniverse is determined by a formula for the number of matter combinations comprising the substance of the space universes.

$$\sum_n \sum_m C_n^m = n! / m!(n-m)! \quad (14)$$

where:

$$2 \leq m \leq n.$$

n – equals maximal amount of primary matters, specifically having the dimension quantization, coefficient γ_i , which form space universes within a given zone of inner dimensional fluctuation of the matrix space. Most often the number of space universes producing a metauniverse is less than maximal. The further from the center of the matrix space mergence zone, the greater the difference between the potentially possible and actual number of space universes giving rise to a metauniverse.

Also, the further from the center, the more “vacant spots” exist.

In essence, then, the vicissitudes of dimensional quantization of a given zone's dimensional fluctuation are **the requisite conditions for the creation of space universes**.

The above **requirement is met** only when **the requisite mass of primary mat-**

ters for space universe synthesis winds up in the zone of inner dimensional fluctuation of the matrix space. Although the mass of matter exploded from the matrix space mergence zone is huge, it is always **a calculable value**. Such a mass is sufficient for the formation of a finite number of space universes.

After the superexplosion, the matrix space mergence zone diminishes, causing a decrease in the mass of incoming matter. In time, this process achieves a certain level of equilibrium.

As a result of the superexplosion, a system of metauniverses arises, which we accordingly designate as **a superspace of the first order**, resulting from the mergence of **nine forms of matter** (see **Figs. 170, 171**).

It is noteworthy that the metauniverses forming inside the zones showing inner fluctuations of their matrix space dimension also affect the dimension of the matrix space around them. This causes the curvature arising from the mergence of the two matrix spaces to vary in different directions. This implies a certain difference in both form and qualitative composition of the metauniverses arising in such zones.

The result, therefore, is an unequal distribution of primary matters in different directions. This, in turn, leads to differing degrees of secondary impact by the emerging metauniverses on the matrix space dimension of their respective zones. The curvature arising at the moment of superexplosion also has a different sign along the axis of the matrix space mergence zones (see **Figs. 167, 168**). Consequently, the metauniverses arising in these inner zones of matrix space curvature cause secondary dimensional curvature in a direction opposite to and parallel to the axis of the matrix space mergence zone.

These oppositely-directed deflections occur on both sides as the metauniverses undergo formation. This leads to the closure of the matrix space's secondary curvature in the region of the balanced dimensionality of the matrix space that existed prior to the superexplosion.

Thus, from the unfolding of the above processes, a closed system of metauniverses emerges – **a superspace of the first order** (see **Fig. 170**).

In our matrix space, the mergence of opposing currents, flowing from opposite directions, occurs as a result of the impact of the metauniverses on the matrix space dimension and gives rise to metauniverses composed of nine forms of matter. In the process, superspace closes in upon itself like a clam in its shell.

Primary matters flowing through the matrix space mergence zone happen to lack the next region of the matrix space dimensional curvature which would allow fusion to occur. Such zones arise only when two mergence zones of the same-sign matrix spaces emerge relatively close to one another. This type of mergence generates countercurrents of inner curvature of the matrix space dimension, creating supplementary zones of the matrix space's inner dimensional curvature.

In these zones, metauniverses arise from the fusion of ten forms of matter. This, in turn, again leads to the mergence of these newly-arisen structures as they flow

from opposite directions, as a consequence of their influence on the dimension of the matrix space they happen to occupy.

A superspace of the second order is thus created out of **ten forms of matter** (see [Fig. 172](#)). At this point, metauniverses of second-order superspace merge at a balance level of the matrix space dimension that is different from that required for the fusion of first-order superspace structures. This is due to the differing degree of impact of the nine-matter and ten-matter metauniverses on their respective matrix space dimensions.

For eleven-matter metauniverses to arise, three second-order superspaces must be situated at a distance from each other no greater than their own size. In such cases, three waves of inner matrix space curvature arise, which resonate to create additional curvature zones. Within these zones, the synthesis of metauniverses from eleven forms of matter unfolds.

Once again, the mergence of oppositely-directed metauniverses occurs, but this time on a different balance level of the matrix space. A closed-circuit space system arises – **a superspace of the third order** (see [Fig. 173](#)).

Following this sequence of events, a new and very stable system of metauniverses emerges, on a different balance level of matrix space dimension, stemming from the countercurrents' fusions – **a superspace of the fourth order** (see [Fig. 174](#)). Mergence occurs due to the powerful impact on the matrix space dimension created by the flow from opposite directions. This gives rise to the next system of metauniverses – structurally identical to the superspace of the fourth order, but composed of twelve forms of matter.

These two systems create conditions for the mergence of the next system of metauniverses along a common axis – however, this time, out of eleven forms of matter. Note that each of the next spatial formations has a decrease in the number of their constituent forms of matter – owing to the fact that the level of merging metauniverses changes its sign. That is, the matrix space curvature – rather than increasing – keeps decreasing.

This evolutionary process leads to the consistent formation of metauniverse systems along the common axis. The amount of the constituent primary matters drops to two (see [Fig. 175](#)).

At the periphery of this “ray” or axis, regions are formed where not a single type of matter can merge with another to create a metauniverse. A strain of our matrix space ensues, thereby giving rise to zones of possible mergence with another matrix space.

Two variations of matrix space mergence are possible here. In one case, matter from our matrix space flows through the mergence zone and starts overflowing and breaking up into another matrix space.

In the second case, matter of another matrix space can flow into the mergence zone, where it breaks up and triggers the synthesis of matter of our type. In the first

instance, the analog of a supernova emerges; in the second, the analog of a black hole of equal dimension is created.

Such variations in the merging of matrix spaces are most significant for understanding the origin of the two types of superspace of the sixth order – **the six-ray**²⁵ and **the anti six-ray**.

The major difference of these superspaces lies only in the direction of overflow of their matter currents. In one case, matter from another matrix space flows in through the central zone of the merging matrix spaces and out of our matrix space through the peripheral portions of the “ray” zones. In the anti six-ray, matter flows over in the opposite direction. Primary matters from our matrix space flow out through the central zone and those from another matrix space flow in through the “ray” mergence zones.

The six-ray is formed by the mergence of six similar “rays” in one central zone. During this process, zones having a curvature equal to the matrix space dimension emerge all around the central zone where metaspaces composed of fourteen forms of matter arise. These, in turn, merge to form a closed system of metauniverses that combine six TraysY, rounding them off into **a unified six-ray system** (see [Fig. 176](#)).

Moreover, the number of TraysY depends upon the capacity of our matrix space to merge a maximum of fourteen primary matters. The combination of universes resulting would have a space dimension equal to π ($\pi = 3.14\dots$).

The above value is very close to three, which explains exactly why six “rays” arise and why we speak of three dimensions, etc.

This establishes a balanced system of matter distribution between our matrix space and another.

Once the six-ray formation is complete, its stability is possible only when the inflowing mass of matter equals that of the outflow.

$$\iint \chi^{(+)} dm_i d_i \equiv 6 \iint \eta^{(-)} dm_i d_i \quad (15)$$

where:

$\chi^{(+)}$ – equals the central zone of matrix space mergence through which primary matters flow into our matrix space.

$\eta^{(-)}$ – equals ray zones of mergence with another matrix space, through which primary matters flow out of our matrix space.

i – equals the number of primary matters making up the sexta.

m_i – equals the mass of primary matters.

²⁵ A coined word to signify a spatial structure consisting of a center and six radiating branches or “rays” (see [Fig. 176](#)).

Equation (15) representing all of our matrix space may be rendered in a more useful form:

$$[\iint \chi(+)\mathbf{d}\mathbf{m}_i\mathbf{d}_i - 6\iint \eta(-)\mathbf{d}\mathbf{m}_i\mathbf{d}_i] \equiv \mathbf{0} \quad (16)$$

As we can see from this formula, the laws of Conservation of Matter are not violated on any level of spatial formation. **From microspace to macrospace they are universal.** The consistency of these laws holds – if only from the vantage point that the microcosm is but a structural basis of the macrocosm.

In the case of an anti six-ray, the circulation of matter flows in the opposite direction – from the periphery of that superspace toward its center.

We should note that the curvature of matrix space is maximum in the border areas and minimum in the center of that spatial formation (see [Fig. 177](#)).

The stability of the anti six-ray depends upon the harmony between the primary matters flowing out through the central zone of matrix space mergence and those synthesized in the border (outer) mergence zones of a given type of dimensional quantization. The balance can be depicted by the following equation:

$$\iint \chi(-)\mathbf{d}\mathbf{m}_i\mathbf{d}_i \equiv 6\iint \eta(+)\mathbf{d}\mathbf{m}_i\mathbf{d}_i \quad (17)$$

where:

$\chi^{(-)}$ – equals the central zone of matrix space mergence through which primary matters flow out of our matrix space. (A superanalog is the black hole.)

$\eta^{(+)}$ – equals the border zones of matrix space mergence through which primary matters flow into our matrix space.

\mathbf{m}_i – equals the mass of primary matters of the above.

Equation (16) may be rewritten in the following clearer and more convenient form:

$$\iint \chi(-)\mathbf{d}\mathbf{m}_i\mathbf{d}_i - 6\iint \eta(+)\mathbf{d}\mathbf{m}_i\mathbf{d}_i \equiv \mathbf{0} \quad (18)$$

Naturally, such superspaces abound in our matrix space. They generate what we might call TnodesY in the matrix space and, metaphorically speaking, are its TatomsY. Thus, again, we see the structural analogy between macrocosm and microcosm – imparting to us still another corroboration of their fundamental unity.

Chapter 12. Matrix space systems

A matrix space happens to be non-uniform in dimensionality: this leads to its mergence in specific zones with other matrix spaces, thereby giving rise to the formation of **superspaces**.

The stability of matrix spaces is maintained by a **balance** between the amount of matter synthesized in **the positive zones** of mergence and the amount of matter outflowing from **the negative zones**.

These processes lead to the creation of a certain number of six-ray (\mathbf{n}_1) and anti six-ray (\mathbf{n}_2) space types. Stability of the matrix space is possible if the following equation is satisfied:

$$\mathbf{n}_1 \iint \chi(+) d\mathbf{m}_i d\mathbf{i} - 6 \iint \eta(-) d\mathbf{m}_i d\mathbf{i} \equiv \mathbf{n}_2 \iint \chi(-) d\mathbf{m}_i d\mathbf{i} - 6 \iint \eta(+) d\mathbf{m}_i d\mathbf{i} \quad (19)$$

The probability of the formation of both six-ray and anti six-ray spaces is equally likely along the scale of the entire matrix space. The quantity of these respective space types is approximately equal: ($\mathbf{n}_1 = \mathbf{n}_2$)

$$\begin{aligned} \iint (\chi(+) - \chi(-)) d\mathbf{m}_i d\mathbf{i} &\equiv 0 \\ \iint (\eta(-) - \eta(+)) d\mathbf{m}_i d\mathbf{i} &\equiv 0 \end{aligned} \quad (20)$$

We may reconcile the conditions of the equation only if:

$$\begin{aligned} \chi^{(+)} &\equiv \chi^{(-)} \\ \eta^{(-)} &\equiv \eta^{(+)} \end{aligned} \quad (21)$$

These zones of matrix space mergence have the following dimensions:

$$\begin{aligned} 3,141532654 < \lambda_{\chi(+)} < 3,16179589 \\ 2,859747348 < \lambda_{\eta(-)} < 2,87995058 \end{aligned} \quad (22)$$

and accordingly:

$$\begin{aligned} 2,859747348 < \lambda_{\chi(-)} < 2,87995058 \\ 3,141532654 < \lambda_{\eta(+)} < 3,16179589 \end{aligned} \quad (23)$$

Six-ray and anti six-ray spaces form a cellular structure in the matrix space, creating a “skeleton” – or “crystalline lattice” of the matrix space. It is particularly at the level of matrix spaces that we may witness most graphically the identity of micro-space and macrospace.

Every matrix space of this type is, in effect, a **Mobius strip**. Matrix spaces are also closed systems. This is relates to the fact that conditions of permissible dimensionality for such spaces are not fulfilled everywhere within multidimensionnal space.

Matrix spaces are – not at all – the ultimate space systems. They are just components of the Great Cosmos.

Vast multitudes of space levels exist – we have glimpsed through a tiny aperture at just one of them.

Man – filled with dreams and longing – has always looked to the stars... In the deepest reaches of his subconscious lie memories of distant and alluring stars – the homeland and wellspring of his ancestors who once upon a time came to dwell on planet earth...

The blocked **memory** lies dormant in his brain. Man is asleep – yet his soul craves the stars and longs for a **miracle** – the miracle of discovery and an expanded consciousness... The miracle of finding his identity in the Great Cosmos that surrounds him...

The extent of space is vast, if we gauge it by human standards. No rockets that Earthmen so persistently attempt to launch in their explorations of the Great Cosmos will ever help to unveil the mystery shrouding that disturbing enigma... But man, regrettably, still lacks the zero-transition spaceships – the UFO's – the very devices that could allow him a somewhat deeper view... Yet even with their capacity to travel billions of light years, the UFO's are but a Tgrain of sandY on the shores of the boundless ocean that is the Great Cosmos.

It is only through evolving his **brain**, his **spirit**, his **consciousness** – that man can attempt to penetrate further. Only **INTELLIGENCE** has the power to advance from one horizon to the next. Most crucial of all is never to allow this growth, this evolution, to stop.

The transformation of consciousness is the only effective path to the knowledge of deep space and the unraveling of its mystery.

But the best technology of deep space has not yet been able to create a spacecraft without limitations.

Spaceships capable of folding and unfolding space and traversing the metauniverse are incapable of overcoming the qualitative barriers of matrix space. Any attempts at such a transition usually end up with the total destruction of matter.

There are several reasons for this – in particular, the different qualitative compo-

sition of the various matrix spaces and the variations in their dimensional quantization – for the quantitative and qualitative compositions **are incompatible** whatever their conditions are. A substance of one type – entering a space of another type – totally disintegrates. From the by-products, a substance is then synthesized with a structure identical to that of the space.

Another limitation of zero-transition spacecraft is due to **their modus operandi, which happens to involve the use of the pilots' psi-energy to trigger the process of back-and-forth flow from one level to another**. To achieve this, they utilize the principles governing matter circulation during the process of cell division in living cells.

Additionally, in the local macrospace, vortical movements of primary matters, both of the given and intermediate types, occasionally arise between the different spatial levels – rendering the final outcome of the transit unpredictable.

On the other hand, if it unfolds properly, human evolutionary development offers many advantages that no technology is capable of achieving. We need only recall, for example, how, in human spiritual evolution, spiritual bodies of different qualitative composition are systematically developed. Along with the on-going evolution of the bodies, qualitative barriers between the various levels disappear, potentiating the free transition of consciousness and spirit to any of the above levels.

Completion of the inner **Earth cycle** of development marks the inception of the next phase – harmonious evolutionary development in outer space. At this point, a human opens for himself a qualitatively new TdoorY into the universe – evolving new spiritual bodies as he continues developing his brain. Thus, as the spiritual bodies grow and improve, the qualitative barriers disappear – not only on a planetary scale, but **those of the metauniverse, super- and matrix spaces dissolve as well**. And this process is **infinite**...

The development of an intelligent being, humanoid or otherwise, goes on and on unless he starts to consider himself a “god” – at which point his evolution ceases.

Self-blocking is a distinct possibility, but need not occur if a human maintains his inner harmony – and the Tgolden meanY of balanced currents of heart, will, and intelligence – in keeping, of course, with the newly-developed qualities and structure of the spirit.

We must bear in mind an important point about **the physical brain** – namely, that it is just **a substrate** which makes the thinking process possible. Neurons of the physical brain **do not do any thinking: they merely break up the substance of their level into its constituent primary matters**. This, in turn, provides the potential and fuel for the neurons on the other levels. Etheric, astral and mental body neurons create their own systems on their respective levels – namely, etheric, astral, and mental brain levels that are **as material as the physical level**. The thinking process arises precisely on those levels due to the circulation of the various energy (i.e., primary matter) currents between them.

During the thinking process, a host of circulating primary matter currents

emerges – diverse in both composition and activity – capable of activating various numbers of brain levels in an intelligent being. Regrettably, all too often, evolutionary progress is halted by the mistaken notion that, since the physical brain is limited in volume, it is impossible to “squeeze” out more than it is capable of delivering... Finite is finite! Nevertheless...

Even if an intelligent being cannot alter his brain's physical volume, what prevents him from **changing the sizes of the qualitative structures of his brain on other levels?!..** This is what opens the door to **infinite evolution**. What it requires is knowing how to do it and avoiding the loss of harmony and balance on any level.

Man has no inkling about the vast potential for evolutionary development at his disposal... All it takes is the knowledge of a “key” to that potential expansion. Perhaps this book may help some of you to discover such a “key”... Read it carefully – take time to think about it – and the door to the “impossible” will open – to an infinite and extraordinary pathway of Integrity and Enlightenment – of space and of ourselves.

There is another concept, however, we would like to touch upon here – namely, that phenomenon of nature known as **time**.

What is time? Everyone knows his birth date and that thenceforth he advances towards death – sometimes more rapidly, sometimes more slowly... Man knows only too well that he is predestined to live **a certain life span** measured in years, months, days, hours, minutes, seconds... Few, however, happen to realize that **TIME DOES NOT EXIST AT ALL**, that it is a system of countdown devised by humans on this planet for their own convenience. **Time is merely a convention** to mark the processes occurring in physical substances possessing their own cycles and rhythms, which man uses as units for the countdown of time.

Similar processes on other parts of the planet also unfold with certain differences so insignificant that they are scarcely noticed at all. Nevertheless, **they do exist**.

The velocity of the various processes depends upon **the shape of material bodies, as well as the quantity and quality of incoming energies from outer space**.

We should note at this point that changes (disruptions) occur not only on the physical level but also on all the other levels as well. The influence of the incoming currents first registers **on the mental level**, causing changes within it, followed by changes **on the astral and etheric levels**. It is only after this sequence of events that changes occur **on the physical level**.

This is due to the fact that all the above levels belong to the same system, but differ quantitatively and qualitatively in the composition of their constituent matters, as well as in the mobility of their structures. For this reason, varying forces of external impact are required to implement such changes. For example, a change generated on the outer planetary planes will naturally reach and manifest on the physical level after gradually passing through the preceding levels first.

This brings us to the point of understanding of how it is possible **to see the future**... And, as you will see, there is nothing mystical nor supernatural about it.

Let us imagine that we are in a seven-story building. The first floor corresponds to the physical level; the second to the etheric; the third, the astral; the fourth, fifth, sixth and seventh to the first, second, third, and fourth mental levels. Let us now imagine a story line in which the “residents” of the seventh floor have neglected to turn off a water faucet and the floor begins to get flooded. After a while, the water seeps to the sixth, then to all the intervening floors, until it eventually reaches the first or ground floor.

Now, if some tenant on the first floor takes an elevator up to the seventh story – before the water has leaked down to the intervening floors – and returns with warnings of imminent trouble, it is highly likely that the rest of the tenants will make a laughing stock of him... Or, they may label him a lunatic – as has happened so often before to those who were called “**prophets**” or “**clairvoyants**”. This befell such seers because so often what they saw on the seventh floor displeased those who held the power on the first floor.

Thus, it would seem a much better option for such a seer to find a “key” to the apartment with the open faucet and try – if he can – to turn it off... Regrettably, the fortunate ones on record who managed to find such a “key” were few and far between... And many of the prophets – owing to sheer ignorance of the people or at the command of those in power – were stoned or burnt at the stake as sorcerers or witches...

One of the better known among prophets and clairvoyants was Queen Micalda, who could depict events surrounding Jesus Christ a thousand years before his death and even point out the tree from which the cross of his torment would be carved.

Micalda evoked horror in the minds of the people around her, who could not fathom what she was foretelling. Only three of her nine books on the future of the human race have survived; the rest were burnt.

Another woman renowned as seer and clairvoyant was Cassandra of Troy, daughter of King Priam – never understood even by those closest to her, and doomed to tell the truth but never to be believed. (She is celebrated in Euripedes' *The Trojan Women* and twice mentioned in Homer's *Iliad*).

A later prophet, Nostradamus, was able to write verses depicting future events with great precision, but could not find the “magic key” to change anything...

These were some that at least are known. But so many more names have been lost to human memory... Practically all such gifted people led unhappy lives – tragically misunderstood by their contemporaries... The troublesome burden of knowing a future that was beyond their power to change weighed heavily upon them and sorely oppressed them...

The depth of penetration into the future by thought and consciousness depends upon what “floor”, what planetary level, a person's consciousness has been able to

touch. The deepest penetration into our planet's future is possible through thought transition to the fourth mental level of the planet. At this stage one may glimpse hundreds and thousands of years into the future. The least penetration is to the etheric planetary level, where one may glimpse days, months, and years into the future.

Let us now turn to **the past**.

Everything transpiring in nature involves changes in primary matters, with respect to composition, quantity, and their type of evolutionary dynamics.

You may recall that our metauniverse generates a system of discrete spaces of varying qualitative and quantitative composition. Our space universe is formed by the mergence of seven primary matters and happens to be set somewhat off center from the zone of dimensional curvature in which our metauniverse was “born”.

In the center of that zone, a universe composed of nine primary matters was created. Consistently moving away from the center, within discrete zones that change dimensionality by a value of $\Delta\lambda$, space universes were formed having eight, seven, six, five, four, three, and two primary matters possessing our type of dimensional quantization. If we consider, then, the evolution of a metauniverse on a cosmic scale, we may speculate that the central region, composed of nine forms of matter, is the most stable, while the borderline zones seem especially unstable – an instability stemming from the extreme impact caused by the mergence of two primary matters in the borderline space universes.

As this evolutionary process unfolds, certain disturbances arise in the substance making up these space universes. These make for instability – throughout the mergence zones of space universes composed of three types of matter – giving rise to a change in the dynamics of these space universes' ongoing processes.

Gradually, these disturbances spread, penetrating through to the shared elements of the borderline space universes, toward the central space universe created by the mergence of nine primary matters.

Thus, there is one direction in which a consistent chain of events is unfolding in our metauniverse – from the space universe composed of two primary matters to those synthesized from nine (see Fig. 165).

That is why perturbation of primary matters comes to our space universe from the space universe composed of six primary matters. Once they have undergone the stages of evolutionary development in our space universe, they Tflow overY into the next composed of eight primary matters and, similarly, reach the center of our metauniverse – a space universe made up of nine primary matters. **It is for this reason that time flows in one direction only.**

Then, after completing the developmental cycle in our space universe, the primary disturbances bearing the “imprint” of the latter's processes – reach this space universe composed of eight primary matters and, through it, arrive at the center of our metauniverse's zone of dimensional curvature.

In other words, the “apartment house” of our analogy also happens to have

floors located below the zero level. Thus we may extend the analogy of the “water leak” as follows: from the first floor it leaks down to the first “basement” floor, then down to the second, third, etc., “basement” floors. So, even when the water leak on the seventh floor has been repaired, the water that had accumulated there over time continues seeping downward.

Any given moment of **present** time becomes **past** and – turning into a small “drop” it merges with the River of Time flowing from the future into the past...

Just as we may ascend to the seventh floor and learn of an event that is slated to take place a little later on, so it happens that we may also descend to the “basement” floors and learn what has already transpired in the past.

Thus, again, the deeper an individual can move the elevator of his consciousness, the further he can see into the future.

The past and future are both material and real and constitute an indissoluble process.

Of interest is the fact that nuclear physics has run into a temporal paradox at the level of elementary particles: **the past predetermines the future...**

In principle, there is no paradox here. It is simply as natural and proper as death following birth: death happens to be on one level, birth on another – and vice versa.

There is, however, another aspect to transit onto other levels of our planet...

Many people may claim that they have established a Tcommunication channelY with the souls of the deceased, with other civilizations, with Christ, Buddha, Krishna, and other gods or “angels” – from whom they are receiving information.

Primarily, we should like to extend a warning to all those either attempting or already doing so.

It is indeed possible to contact souls of the deceased on all Earth levels, as well as representatives of civilizations beyond the boundaries of Earth's spheres. However, **to actualize that possibility**, one must bear in mind the following:

1) It is possible to leave Earth's confines and cross qualitative barriers only if the soul has evolved sufficiently to produce **six bodies – seven, in all, including the physical body**. Only then can mental contact be achieved with outer space civilizations – which happen to be numerous. But it is important to remember that extraterrestrial civilizations – even those considerably more advanced than ours – can be **Dark**, and therefore malign, in their ideology.

2) If a human, not yet finished with his Earth cycle of evolution, attempts to Treach outY, to establish contact with other civilizations and actually **makes** “contact” – regrettably it is not with superior intelligences, but with Earth creatures of the astral plane and – in the best possible case – with those on the first mental level.

The above spirits come out “hunting” for the energy necessary to sustain them... Thus, when an unwary individual “creates a channel” and ruptures the qualitative barrier, the Spirit scans the brain of the seeker and creates a hologram of a sought-after

object or highly trusted figure. If the person believes in Christ, the impostors assume his image – (interestingly, Christ's appearance varies for every seeker) – and speak on his behalf, while seizing the vital energy of such a trusting individual. That unfortunately is the price one pays for ignorance...

Many of your deepest aspirations and dreams are possible – and what is possible may surpass your wildest expectations.

Space and time travel; changing the present and future; contacts with civilizations of both the Lesser and Greater Cosmos; climate control; control of processes unfolding in nature and in human society – and much, much more – are possible.

Yet, again, all this requires knowledge, knowledge, and more knowledge... The New Knowledge of the laws governing the evolution of nature, intelligence, and the universe...

For those who so aspire, let this book serve as a small bridge – across the River of Ignorance and on to beachheads of Truth and Light – toward a New Future and New Humanity – as pure and fair as our own blue planet Earth...

Nicolai Levashov
February, 1993
Moscow-San Francisco

Appendix I. The third appeal to mankind

Presented in the year 1929 A.D

An appeal by the Coalition Group of Observers (CGO) to all intelligent inhabitants of the planet Earth, to the race calling itself “mankind”.

Delivered by E. Roerich and N. Roerich, intermediaries of Shambhala. 1929

This is the third and final Declaration of the CGO to people of the planet Earth. The CGO gave its **First Declaration** to the inhabitants of **Amuradgehature**, then the largest city on Earth **in the year 576 B.C.** The **Second Declaration** was presented to the inhabitants of **Tkaacetkoal**, the largest city on the American Continent **in the year 711 A.D.** The present **Declaration** to the people of Earth is basically identical to previous ones in content and is written in the most common languages on Earth: Chinese, Russian, English, and Spanish. The text was edited with a consideration for contemporary levels of the inhabitants’ knowledge and misconceptions.

The sole purpose of this **Declaration** is to propose negotiations in the near future between representatives of mankind and the Coalition in order to determine whether mankind is ready to become a member of the Coalition. The negotiations will be possible only upon your completion of certain preliminary conditions which will be given later. For a proper understanding of these conditions we shall offer a brief description of the true nature of the cosmos compared with the one resulting from mankind’s characteristic way of thinking.

By now mankind has a more accurate conception of the universe than it had at the time of the first and second Declarations. So, indeed, you recognize that the Earth is not flat and is not located in the center of the Universe: it rotates around the Sun, like the other planets; and you are certainly aware that the sun is not located in the center of the universe, but is just another star within the galaxy.

However, the most recent energy transformation, sustaining the activity of the stars (including your own sun) and permitting the existence of life on Earth is only one of many in the universe. Aside from these observations, the vast majority of your cosmological constructs are **in error**.

Your scientists’ belief that all universal laws are and always will be unvarying and that physical constants are unchanging is illusory. For example, the gravitational constant changes significantly even within your solar system, not to mention on any larger scale. This fact has led you to seriously miscalculate the size of galaxies and the distances between them, and has also produced the erroneous theory of a circumscribed universe and, only this year, another erroneous theory of an expanding universe. Your basic concept of three-dimensional space, which serves as a fundamental building block for your cosmological ideas, is also in error.

The physical world is always changing; there is nothing static in it, including spatial dimensions. Dimensions in space fluctuate, changing evenly over a very wide

range. The best condition for the beginning of organic life is a spatial dimension that equals $+p$ (3.1416...). Any significant deviation from that number will have a negative influence on life. At present the region of your solar system has a dimension of $+3.00017$. The nearness of that figure to the even number 3 (resulting in your three-dimensional concept of volume) simply misled you.

A gravitational vortex with a dimension of -3.15 is drifting close to the edge of the greatest concentration of stars in your galaxy. Even if it only barely grazes your galaxy, it threatens to wipe out all organic life on all the planets that do not have proper protection. This situation makes it imperative for you to become a member of the Coalition in the near future, at least within the next 6,500 earth years, so the Coalition will have enough time to help mankind to prepare and protect itself from the vortex.

Presently there are about 220,000 (two hundred twenty thousand) intelligent races in your galaxy, including yourselves, who are considering joining the Coalition. But please do not construe our warning about the vortex as an attempt to influence your decision.

You are in error regarding **the origin of life on Earth**. The solar system originated from a dust-like cloud, disseminated by the Coalition's construction corps in a certain region of the your universe that has the two conditions necessary for the initiation and development of life. This region is sufficiently remote from other stars and has a dimension of space close to $+p$.

You are mistaken **when you compare an intelligent race to a living individual**, thus envisioning the unavoidable deterioration and death of mankind in the near future. During the evolutionary process, about which you have only a very vague understanding, new species of living beings arise out of the old, and one's concern should be for the next generation: to have new, intelligent races on Earth originating from yours. Precisely this consideration must define the goals of an intelligent race.

Meanwhile, according to CGO observations, the human race has no such goal, nor even a semblance of one, leaving its development to chance and aiming all its efforts toward the gratification of temporary needs. Your errors in thinking should not be taken as accidental and transient. They are unavoidable and lasting due to the specific nature of your thought processes, which we shall now briefly explore.

Thought and the very existence of living matter have a common basis. (We remind you that we are forced to express ourselves in your language and at your level of knowledge, and because of this certain inaccuracies may occur). Your thinking and structure are the products of the limits of your logic. The search for logic is characteristic of your way of thinking, but any similarity with the way of thinking typical of the majority of intelligent races, which are members of the Coalition, ends right there. This fact compels many members of the CGO to doubt the correctness of regarding you as an intelligent race.

You analyze problems by thinking in terms of binary processes or alternatives, like an absolute "yes" or an absolute "no", which you accept as real. This is an irra-

tional process of thought used only by those with severely distorted structures. It compounds itself in the multistage analysis of complicated problems. At the same time the number of levels in your analysis is usually very small, even if the problem you are analyzing is quite complicated. The search for a solution comes down to choosing one out of two possibilities where two possible solutions exist, whereas the most correct solution lies somewhere in between.

The following analogy will be clear to your mathematicians: If one obtains answers to “yes” or “no” kinds of questions concerning a particular problem, the solution will be analogous to choosing one of the apices of an N-dimensional cube, whereas the range of possible solutions includes all points of N-dimensional space. To be exact, most of the time you erroneously err in the estimation of the real range of possible solutions which in reality are seldom quantitative.

As best as we can ascertain, in your scientific and juridical law, the meaning of each discovery or invention, the essence of any important idea, can be expressed by a simple sentence, consisting of a hundred words out of a 50,000 word vocabulary, including mathematical and other specific symbols. The total quantity of possible sentences of that vocabulary is represented by a very modest figure, 100. If we consider only those sentences that have an analytic function, that is to convey meaning — the number will be reduced to 50. Now, if we also eliminate those sentences that are grammatically correct but lack even the slightest discernible meaning, the quantity of meaningful sentences remaining will be reduced to 25. Finally, if we then select the false statements from true ones, being generous with the former in our evaluation, we have only **3-10** statements remaining that actually correspond to reality. Meanwhile, we know some examples of life forms from several other planets that are capable of showing at least the same number of various unconditioned reactions to different combinations of external stimuli that are quite consonant with reality; however these life forms cannot be called intelligent. There are such species on your planet too. Evidently, it would be more correct to consider humanity not intelligent, but a **potentially intelligent race**, because the limitations of your thought processes, as you should have already gathered, are not of congenital origin.

The human brain at birth is as impeccable a mechanism for thinking as are the organs of thought of many intelligent races in the universe. The problem is that the development of your thinking process from the very beginning took an absolutely wrong path. At the beginning of the creation of the thinking process, the capability of thinking was one of many potential reactions to the same information (**Fig. 1**). On this graph, labeled “**Logical Foundation**,” the intensity of perception of reaction to the influence of information is located on the ordinate. Acceptability of that reaction is located on the abscissa, with negative reaction to the left of zero, and positive reactions to the right of zero. The curves on the chart represent everything in nature that has not yet been processed by the anti-entropic activity of intelligence. The chaotic splashes of curve are readily explained by physiological threshold effects.

The development of intelligence involves not only the building of a complex system of logical thinking, but also reconstructing and improving the foundation which serves as a basis for that system.

As numerous examples from different intelligent races show, the reconstruction of a logical foundation according to the pattern shown in [Fig. 2](#) best fits the requirements for an accurate comprehension of nature. It is important to mention, however, that we know a few races in the universe who not only show that linear structure but also have some branches stretching out to infinity ([Fig. 3](#)). They constitute their own independent union of races, outside of the Coalition, because we could not find a language in common with them.

The principal difference between their way of thinking and ours is that the area delineating our foundation of logic is **finite**, while their is **infinite**. It is hard for us to survive the heavy impact of their positive and negative reactions to an informational input that extends out to infinity.

Man's primitive logical foundation has two major splashes to the right and to the left of zero, and also several minor ones. This fact shows once again that **man never had before nor does he now have any obstacles to the construction of his own logical foundation in accordance with the pattern of continuous (non-binary) logic generally accepted in the universe**. From the very beginning, man's intellect developed in a completely faulty manner, oriented only on those powerful splashes, so that it now approximates the appearance of the logical foundation shown in [Fig. 4](#). Those splashes to the right and left of zero are nothing but your absolute "yes" and "no," [your binary split] without which you are, in general, unable to imagine anything, even though only the force of habit stands in your way. This ridiculous splitting of your logical base into absolute conceptions of "yes" and "no" is the greatest obstacle to comprehending a state of being which today is only rudimentary in you.

Moreover, you have recently developed a theoretical elaboration of your system of logic that compounds, rather than corrects, your errors: your theoretical logical systems now operate with greater refinement of your binary conceptualizations, leaving out all other variants of logical decision-making ([Fig. 5](#)). These ludicrous theoretical elaborations, instead of being a move forward, are a step backward, even compared with the original, logical, foundation of human thinking described above.

This is because the area of the figure describing your logical foundation, instead of being equal to some finite number, becomes equal to zero. Thus, one of the most primitive functions, which has only two meanings, is taken as the basis of your thinking. A general summary shows that the larger the area describing a logical foundation, the more perfect is the process of thought.

Hence, regrettably, the inevitable but deserved conclusion is that if your system of apprehending reality can scarcely be called **thinking**, it must be **the most primitive of all those possible**. Your binary logic forces you to distort everything that is essential. Thus the natural series of numbers, which is possible in principle, is just an artificial mathematical trick that is only slightly consonant with reality, but it becomes for you the cornerstone of that mathematical foundation so familiar to the ma-

jority of humans. You try to quantify just about everything and at the same time you cannot even provide precise information about the strength of the wind, expressing it simply in binary concepts of “yes” and “no”, “it is” or “it isn’t” and, moreover, without the expectation of any meaningful understanding of those statements.

Arithmetical quantification led you to new problems, brought about more by the primitiveness of your thinking than by the exigencies of reality. So you waste your energy trying to solve them, seeing them as real anomalies of nature that are difficult to harmonize with your world view. One example: your dealing with rational and irrational numbers as if they had a real scale. Binary logic forces you to fragment and artificially separate solid perceptions into independent facts, occurrences, conceptions, and categories, artificially separating them one from the other.

Your limited logic and obsession with quantification forces you to believe that there is a finite number of attributes to an object or event and also to label each of them. This gives you the dubious opportunity of separating one attribute from another, a trick you call “abstraction.” The movement through the steps of abstraction to more common signs is, in your understanding, the only way (and the only right one), but in reality it takes you in the opposite direction from truth.

You believe that moving from the highest level of abstraction to the lowest common denominator is the only correct way to proceed. On the contrary, it is really just the opposite. It is no accident that all your abstract constructs, called philosophical systems, are self-contradicting, even though they are based on a common logic.

Step by step, descending into darkness along levels of abstraction, step by step, losing connection with reality, little by little your philosophical systems lose their orientation and finally at the “dead end” of their progression you are forced to answer the meaningless question about the priority of matter over spirit, by a “yes” or a “no.” Because of the weakness of your logical foundation **you are limited in your ability to finely differentiate between objects and events, basing your distinctions upon a variety of notations, which are quite chaotic and illogical even from the point of view of your own logic.** This is very easily proven, for instance, in the case of human language, where the distinctions are quite inexact.

Your method of communication, which you claim as one of the superior achievements of the human mind, is based upon the establishment of such meaningless differentiations. **If you calculate the number of meaningful sentences in your language, you will see how primitive it is as a method of informational exchange, and is, rather, a way to limit that process. And it is not an achievement of intellect, only a transient, dysfunctional step in the early stage of human evolution.**

Considering language as an instrument for both exchanging and conveying information, you have not yet noticed how much it impacts your way of thinking, how inevitably it forces you into the very same process of fragmentation and compartmentalization. Thus your ethics and esthetics, particularly, contain a multitude of conceptual pairs that are mutually contradictory, such as thesis and antithesis.

Your public and personal morals follow the same principles of polarizing ideas like “love—hate,” “good—evil,” “life—death,” and so on...

Even your own observation, that different nations attach different meanings to those antithetical concepts is of no help to you. In the course of time, the very meanings themselves keep changing. Meanwhile you think of yourselves as **a highly civilized race**, yet in a court of law you apply a “yes” or “no” criterion to determine whether a verdict of guilt or innocence is appropriate for a single individual. Under no circumstances would such criteria be acceptable for determining the fate of a nation. But you permit the categorical principles of “yes” or “no” to dominate even there, turning virtually the entire planet into an enormous jail for all nations.

Moreover, your binary system of logic allows you to entrust the destiny of all nations and the entire human race to a handful of individuals. In international politics this is your idea of “a state of peace” or “a state of war” with abrupt shifts of logic. You think that this is perfectly natural, without even considering whether it is rational, and pursue it with a truly absurd tenacity. The latest world war and the new one about to happen, prove that your precipitous development of technology has not propelled you into wisdom.

Because of the abrupt and almost instantaneous shifts of your social structures and international politics from one state to another, it is very difficult for us to make any prediction regarding your future development. For the last couple of thousand years, the CGO has observed that you are almost continuously at war with each other: because of the natural course of historical processes, it will take twelve thousand years before your warring will begin to diminish.

Nevertheless, the CGO is aware that there has been an accelerated development of intelligence by at least some individuals, and this consideration allows us to believe that this Declaration is not hopeless. However, any agreement between mankind and the Coalition can only be concluded after human beings have overcome their reprehensible habits.

Owing to the primitive state of your logic, the CGO is forced to be skeptical of the development of the human race in the following additional respects: your civilization’s attitude to ward technology and your personal fear of death. The development of technology in itself, is definitely a positive sign, which leads the CGO to favor the human race as intelligent, but the idealization of technology, and your assigning it a special role as the prime attribute of your civilization, is alarming to us. Historically, when separate regions of the Earth lacked direct communication, the human race developed haphazardly. It did achieve several experimental civilizations of different types, some of which were approved by the CGO.

Regrettably, when direct contact between different cultures finally appeared in the process of development and expansion, they could not coexist in peace. Crude, primitive and, because of these qualities, more powerful civilizations usually exterminated those that were more intelligent and humane, only to be exterminated, in turn, by an even cruder force.

Unfortunately, a **mechanistic civilization**, the most primitive of all, dominates the Earth at the present time. It encompasses the entire human race, keeps it under control, and will not give a new civilization the chance to emerge. Only if the mechanistic civilization self-destructs and man takes control into its own hands, will a new and different civilization emerge: one that will be more conducive to the essential well-being of the race.

The CGO hopes that this final Declaration, along with appropriate help from the Coalition, will initiate that transformation provided mankind shows a sincere desire to change. We wish, however, to point out that civilizations with centers in Amuradgehature, at the time of the First Declaration, and Tkaacetkoal, at the time of the Second Declaration, were more attuned to the needs of the human race than your contemporary mechanistic society.

As one of possible means of help, the CGO can provide the human race with detailed descriptions of those civilizations, to be used as models for a new civilization. One of our major criteria for judging a race as intelligent is where every member elevates collective intelligence above all else. Consequently, man as an intelligent being must prioritize the development of the collective racial intelligence. The functions of man are as follows: harvest all information from previous generations, add whatever is newly acquired from experience and perception, then pass it on to the next generation, increased and improved.

Chaotic fluctuations in the movement of an intelligent society's thought processes are necessary: after sifting through history one finds zigzags in the movement of thoughts that correspond to shifts in the changing objective picture of reality. The latter is unpredictable in direction, while the spectrum of thinking of any individual has a consistency during that individual's life span. Hence it follows that **each generation's transformation is necessary not for the preservation and continuation of the species, but for preservation of their cumulative intelligence as a race of intelligent beings**.

Therefore, considering the cosmic laws of Freedom of Will and Freedom of Choice, any hope you have that contact with extraterrestrial races will help to solve your ethical problems are groundless and impractical. The problem has a solution, but it is not what you think. Indeed, generally speaking it is not a problem at all. Moreover, we cannot offer the human race appropriate solutions, no matter how dire the situation might be, because each race has a right to decide its own destiny.

The CGO will maintain contact with mankind and its independent representatives to answer any questions and to provide help with any problem relating to personal character. But the main purpose of this Declaration is to warn you about the coming danger and apprise you of our offer to become a member of the Coalition. At the very first inquiry, the by-laws of the Coalition and a description of its structure may be handed over for study and publication by the government of any of the four largest countries, or by the Secretary of the League of Nations without any further provisos. If you decide to join the Coalition you will first have to undertake the re-

building of the logical foundation of your thinking according to guidelines common to the Coalition.

That stipulation is needed because your distorted way of thinking will cause a growing inferiority complex in anyone who joins, but, also primarily, because of basic differences in the thought process itself. This would lead to failure in the exchange of vital, perhaps very basic, information between the races of the Coalition and mankind. Regrettably, this Declaration is an example of such a flawed communication. At present, mankind is useless to the Coalition and vice versa.

Without the reconstruction of your thought processes, we are powerless even to lend you a hand to protect you from the vortex. As we see it, it will take you about six thousand years to reconstruct the logical foundation of your thinking, which, considering the very considerable threat to your galaxy, is a most crucial period. Therefore you should undertake this task immediately.²⁶

The CGO pledges that as soon as man's first inquiry is received, we will hand over the initial course and detailed instruction for the gradual training of future generations in continuous [non-binary] logic. However, we will not do so before all the intelligent nations of Earth cease their absurd quarrels and agree to concentrate all of their efforts on the lengthy process of thought reconstruction. Otherwise, if a bellicose nation comes to grasp the principles of continuous logic it would be tantamount to giving it an absolute weapon, and ultimately lead to destruction of the entire human race.

The present Third Declaration of the CGO to mankind is the final one. The absence of a response in the next 50 (fifty) earth years will be construed as an indication that mankind is rejecting this offer to become a member of the Coalition.

By permission of The Coalition Group of Observers (CGO).

²⁶ As a result of certain interventions, the threat of annihilation by the gravitational vortex is no longer a problem. However, mankind is in far more imminent danger of extinction through destruction of his ecosystem. *N.L.*

Appendix 2. Derivation of the matrix space system formula

One of the states of balance existing in our matrix space is the parity between the amount of matter out flowing from the space mergence zones and the amount of matter being synthesized within them. We may represent this balance by the following formula:

$$n_1[\iint \chi^{(+)} dm_i di - 6 \iint \eta^{(-)} dm_i di] \equiv n_2[\iint \chi^{(-)} dm_i di - 6 \iint \eta^{(+)} dm_i di] \quad (1)$$

where:

n_1 – equals the number of six-ray space formations.

n_2 – equals the number of anti six-ray space formations.

$\chi^{(+)}$ – equals the central area of the matrix space mergence zones – the access route of primary matters entering our matrix space (which is a six-ray space).

$\chi^{(-)}$ – equals the central area of the matrix space mergence zone, the route of primary matters exiting our matrix space.

$\eta^{(-)}$ – equals the border zones of mergence with other matrix spaces – the route of primary matters flowing into our matrix space.

$\eta^{(+)}$ – equals the “ray” zones of mergence with other matrix spaces – the route for primary matters exiting our matrix space.

i – equals the quantity of primary matters.

m – equals the mass of primary matters.

After some simple substitutions, we may express the balance equation as follows:

$$= 0$$

The above equation holds true when the expressions in brackets equal zero.

$$[n_1 \iint \chi^{(+)} dm_i di - n_2 \iint \chi^{(-)} dm_i di] - 6[n_1 \iint \eta^{(-)} dm_i di - n_2 \iint \eta^{(+)} dm_i di] = 0 \quad (2)$$

if

$$n_1 \iint \chi^{(+)} dm_i di - n_2 \iint \chi^{(-)} dm_i di \equiv 0$$

$$n_1 \iint \eta^{(-)} dm_i di - n_2 \iint \eta^{(+)} dm_i di \equiv 0$$

Maximum stability is attained when $n_1=n_2$. Under other conditions, matrix space is unstable. The creation of space formations continues in the matrix space until a complete balance is achieved.

With the establishment of balance, the system of equations develops as follows:

$$\begin{aligned}\iint \chi^{(+)} d\mathbf{m}_i d\mathbf{i} - \iint \chi^{(-)} d\mathbf{m}_i d\mathbf{i} &\equiv 0 \\ \iint \eta^{(-)} d\mathbf{m}_i d\mathbf{i} - \iint \eta^{(+)} d\mathbf{m}_i d\mathbf{i} &\equiv 0\end{aligned}\quad (3)$$

or:

$$\begin{aligned}\iint [\chi^{(+)} d\mathbf{m}_i d\mathbf{i} - \chi^{(-)} d\mathbf{m}_i d\mathbf{i}] &\equiv 0 \\ \iint [\eta^{(-)} d\mathbf{m}_i d\mathbf{i} - \eta^{(+)} d\mathbf{m}_i d\mathbf{i}] &\equiv 0\end{aligned}\quad (4)$$

and further:

$$\begin{aligned}\iint (\chi^{(+)} - \chi^{(-)}) d\mathbf{m}_i d\mathbf{i} &\equiv 0 \\ \iint (\eta^{(-)} - \eta^{(+)}) d\mathbf{m}_i d\mathbf{i} &\equiv 0\end{aligned}\quad (5)$$

The above equation is true only if:

$$\begin{aligned}\chi^{(+)} &\equiv \chi^{(-)} \\ \eta^{(-)} &\equiv \eta^{(+)}\end{aligned}\quad (6)$$

This represents the state of balance of any system of matrix spaces.

Matrix spaces of our type have the following coefficient of quantization:

$$\gamma = 0.020203236...$$

For the creation of a metauniverse, a minimum of two primary matters must merge.

The above also requires that the dimension of the matrix space zone of curvature equals:

$$\lambda_2 = 2.89915382...$$

This is the smallest space dimension permitting conditions for the mergence of two primary matters of our type. For primary matters of a different type, having a different g , the dimension can be greater or smaller, including zero or even a minus value.

The dimension of universes created from a larger number of primary matters can be derived from the following formula:

$$\lambda_i = 2.89915382... + \gamma(i-2) \quad (7)$$

From the above we may arrive at dimensions of universes possessing different qualitative and quantitative composition:

$$\lambda_2 = 2.89915382...$$

$$\lambda_3 = 2.919357056...$$

$$\lambda_4 = 2.939560292...$$

$$\lambda_5 = 2.959763528...$$

$$\lambda_6 = 2.979966764...$$

$$\lambda_7 = 3.00017...$$

$\lambda_8 = 3.020373236...$ – equals the dimensions of spaces giving rise to metauniverses.

$\lambda_9 = 3.040576472...$ – equals the dimension of first-order super spaces.

$\lambda_{10} = 3.0607797...$ – equals the dimension of second-order super spaces.

$\lambda_{11} = 3.08098293...$ – equals the dimension of third-order super spaces.

$\lambda_{12} = 3.10118617...$ – equals the dimension of fourth-order super spaces.

$\lambda_{13} = 3.1213894...$ – equals the dimension of fifth-order super spaces.

$\lambda_{14} = 3.1415926...$ – equals the dimension of sixth-order super spaces.

$$\lambda_{15} = 3.16179589...$$

$$\lambda_{16} = 3.1819991...$$

$$\lambda_{17} = 3.202202362...$$

$\lambda_{18} = 3.222405538...$ – equals the dimension of higher-order super spaces.

There are also in existence mirror-image spaces of the above-mentioned higher-order super spaces; they are shifted horizontally in accordance with the direction of the fluctuating matrix space dimension. They originate not in the matrix space flexion, but inside the protrusion arising from the curvature of matrix space. Within such zones, different conditions may arise, causing the same primary matters to merge into substance in a different order. If a matrix space happens to have a dimension equal to $-\pi$, or proportional to $-\pi$, an antistructure substance is created.

Total annihilation of all substance occurs during the flow of matter through the matrix space mergence zones. That is precisely what was alluded to in “The Third Appeal to Mankind,” Vol. 1.

We should like to reassure our readers about that antivortex, measuring -3.15, which had been heading toward our galaxy. Some intelligent entities found a way to

neutralize it by changing the curvature in the local volume of space (thereby changing its dimension). They accomplished this solely by the use of their psi-fields, without employing any technology.

This again brings home to us how limitless are the abilities of the **INTELLECT**.

Unfortunately, even with the antivortex neutralized, Homo Sapiens and all of planet Earth are still facing the threat of extinction – as **a result of the disharmony between man and nature**.

Appendix 3. Exercises for developing and using your psi-field

Everyone has a psi-field around him, which varies from one individual to another in structure, density and potential. There are also properties common to all fields, as well as individual peculiarities. First and foremost for everyone – **is learning how to generate and manipulate one's own protective field**. Everyone needs to develop the ability to create such a shield on a subconscious level. How can we accomplish this?

First, concentrate on the following thought: “From my own energy I create a protective shell (or cocoon) around me, that shields me from negative energy.”

Repeat the statement at every free moment possible, until your brain develops a conditioned reflex for protection.

Next, intermittently check the state and strength of your shield. If you are in a crowd, you should evoke maximum protection. At home, minimal will suffice. Also, it is imperative that you protect your physical body and spirit before going to sleep. To do so, you must create an energy cocoon around both your physical body and spirit.

A correctly fashioned shield minimizes the possibility of the spirit's destruction. An absence of negative emotions is essential to maintain total protection. Otherwise the negative emotions will create energy currents compatible with the lower astral qualitative level and cause a breach in the shield from within outward. This will render you vulnerable to the impact of astral creatures and any other psi-energetic influences.

Jesus, too, exhorted us to avoid the negative emotions, even though he always felt it necessary to do battle with evil and not succumb to resignation by “turning the other cheek.”

For he knew only too well that if we evoke negative emotions in the battle between good and evil – even if directed against the source of the evil – we shall become that source and fall in defeat. **That is exactly the power of evil**. To fight it we must preserve our emotional purity, which is crucial for our soul's development, as well as for combatting evil.

In addition to its protective function, energy may also be used to purify foods, along with water, juices and other liquids we consume for our normal organismic functioning.

But every food product – meat or vegetable – contains organic toxins that accelerate the organism's destruction and retard evolutionary progress. So it is essential that we neutralize and disintegrate these poisons.

Concentrate on starting an active movement of energy through your bodily energy channels. Then – mentally direct your energy through your hands over the food

you wish to detoxify. While doing so, imagine how the energy disintegrates all the poisons in the food. As the energy moves through your hands you will feel some vibration, heat and occasional prickling sensations. The more active the process of poison disintegration, the stronger the sensation you will feel. You may apply this same method to purify water, juices and any other liquids.

In addition to neutralizing the toxins of your ingested substances, you may also be able to enhance the positive qualities of those substances, as well as to create and instill new qualities and properties. If, in so doing, you are able to visualize the energy currents at work, you are endowed with a heightened sensitivity and the potential – with proper development – of attaining a higher level of soul consciousness. I can only wish that each and every one of you may tear the blindfold off your eyes and, finding the true evolutionary path, discover the transcendent beauty of nature, world, and universe.

Appendix 4. List of illustrations

[Download illustrations – 8,696 MB](#)

A. Astrological Ages of Earth

Following the creation of planet Earth, primary matter currents continue penetrating its structures. Relationship of these flows to the general flow varies and changes over time.

Fig. 103. During the age of **Aries**, **G** matter predominates over the other primary matters. This is conducive to the development of the **etheric body**. The manifestations in man are robust activity, strong will and physical strength.

1; 2; 3; 4; 5; 6 – physical, etheric, astral, first mental, second mental and third mental spheres.

Fig. 104. In the age of **Pisces**, **F** matter predominates, creating favorable conditions for the development of the human astral body, manifested in heightened sexual activity and strong emotions, mostly negative. (**Age of the Devil**)

1; 2; 3; 4; 5; 6 – physical, etheric, astral, first mental, second mental and third mental spheres.

Fig. 105. In the age of **Aquarius**, **E** matter predominates, creating favorable conditions for the development of the first mental body and the intellect.

1; 2; 3; 4; 5; 6 – physical, etheric, astral, first mental, second mental and third mental spheres.

Fig. 106. The harmonious development of a human individual in the course of evolution.

J₀ – the minimal level of intelligence and **spirituality** required for mental contact with other (higher) civilizations.

E₀ – the minimal energetic potential required for such contact.

B. The Human Immune System

Fig. 107. Mechanism of action of the human immune system.

W₁ – active phase of the human immune reaction.

W₂ – passive (chronic) phase of the human immune reaction.

J₁^{max} – initial protective surge (“splash”) of human immune system activity.

J₂; J₃; J₄; J₅; J₆; J₇ – subsequent “splashes” of human immune system activity

t₁; t₃; t₅; t₇; t₉; t₁₁ – times of cessation in the immune system's struggle with the disease.

t₂; t₄; t₆; t₈; t₁₀; t₁₂ – times when the immune system resumes fighting the disease.

t₂'; t₄'; t₆' – actual time needed by the immune system for the complete recovery

of activity.

C. The Autonomic Nervous System

Fig. 108. Autonomic Nervous System. The system operating and controlling the organ functions of the human body.

1. area of the cerebral cortex controlling pancreatic function.
2. site of the hypothalamus.
3. reticular formation.
4. hypophysis.
5. sympathetic center of the spinal cord.
6. sympathetic nerve.
7. parasympathetic center of the spinal cord.
8. parasympathetic nerve.
9. pancreas.

Fig. 109. – level of human immune system activity.

J^{\max} – level of the human immune system in health

J_1 – level of the human immune system in presence of an AIDS virus infection.

J_2 – level of the immune system at the onset of active phase of the disease.

t_1 – onset of incubation period

t_2 – end of incubation period

D. Types of Human Psyche

Fig. 110. – Sanguine temperament: comparison of developmental levels in the etheric and astral bodies of the human spirit.

1. Physical body.
 2. Etheric body.
 3. Astral body.
- J_2 – level of etheric body development.
- J_3 – level of astral body development.
- $h; i; j$ – qualitative barrier between levels.

Fig. 111. Phlegmatic temperament: comparison of developmental levels of etheric and astral bodies of the human spirit.

1. Physical body.
 2. Etheric body.
 3. Astral body.
- J_2 – level of etheric body development.

J₃ – level of astral body development.

h; i; j – qualitative barrier between levels.

Fig. 112. Melancholic temperament: comparison of developmental levels of etheric and astral bodies of the human spirit.

1. Physical body.

2. Etheric body.

3. Astral body.

J₂ – level of etheric body development.

J₃ – level of astral body development.

h; i; j – qualitative barrier between levels.

Fig. 113. Choleric temperament: comparison of developmental levels of etheric and astral bodies of the human spirit.

1. Physical body.

2. Etheric body.

3. Astral body.

J₂ – level of etheric body development.

J₃ – level of astral body development.

h; i; j – qualitative barrier between levels.

E. Biorhythms

Fig. 114. Physical biorhythm related to the cycle of etheric body activity.

1. Physical body.

2. Etheric body.

3. Astral body.

4. First mental body.

h; i; j – qualitative barrier between levels.

Fig. 115. Emotional biorhythm related to the cycle of etheric body activity.

1. Physical body.

2. Etheric body.

3. Astral body.

4. First mental body.

h; i; j – qualitative barrier between levels.

Fig. 116. Intellectual biorhythm related to the cycle of etheric body activity.

1. Physical body.

2. Etheric body.
3. Astral body.
4. First mental body.

h; i; j – qualitative barrier between levels.

Fig. 117. Thickness of qualitative barrier between physical and etheric spheres as it relates to time of day.

1. Physical body.
2. Protective shell of physical body.
3. Qualitative barrier between physical and etheric spheres.
4. Daytime.
5. Nighttime.

F. The impact of moon on the human protective shield

Fig. 118. Minimal impact of new moon on the human protective shield

1. Physical body.
2. Spirit.
3. Protective shield of physical body.
- 3*. Protective shield of spirit.
4. Cord connecting physical body and spirit.

Fig. 119. Lunar influence on the human protective shield.

1. Physical body.
2. Spirit.
3. Protective shield of physical body.
- 3*. Protective shield of spirit.
4. Cord connecting physical body and spirit.

Fig. 120. Maximum negative impact of full moon on the human protective shield.

1. Physical body.
2. Spirit.
3. Protective shield of physical body.
- 3*. Protective shield of spirit.
4. Cord connecting physical body and spirit.

G. Cancer – etiology and mechanisms

Fig. 121. Structure of healthy tissue on the physical, etheric, astral and first mental levels.

1. Physical tissue.
2. Etheric tissue.
3. Astral tissue.
4. First mental level tissue.

Fig. 122. Destruction of tissue structure on the first mental, astral and etheric levels.

1. Physical tissue.
2. Etheric tissue.
3. Astral tissue.
4. First mental level tissue.
5. Area of tissue destruction.

Fig. 123. Genesis of the cancer tumor on physical and etheric levels.

1. Physical tissue.
2. Etheric tissue.
3. Astral tissue.
4. First mental level tissue.
5. Area of tissue destruction.
6. Cancer tumor of physical tissue.
- 6'. Cancer tumor of etheric tissue.

Fig. 124. Removal of cancer tumor on the physical level has no impact on tumor on the etheric level.

1. Physical tissue.
2. Etheric tissue.
3. Astral tissue.
4. First mental level tissue.
5. Area of tissue structure destruction.
6. Cancer tumor of etheric level.
7. Area of removal of physical cancer tumor.

Fig. 125. Recurrence of cancer tumor on the physical level from the etheric tissue level.

1. Physical tissue.
2. Etheric tissue.
3. Astral tissue.
4. First mental level tissue.

5. Area of tissue structure destruction.

6. Recurrence of cancer tumor on physical level.

6'. Cancer tumor of etheric level.

H. Possible invasion of the physical body by a foreign spirit during sleep

Fig. 126. Protective shell, weak or undermined by disease, under minimal negative lunar influence.

1. Physical body.

2. Spirit having a physical body (incarnate).

3. Protective shield of the physical body.

3*. Spirit's protective shield.

4. Cord connecting physical body and spirit.

5. Spirit lacking a physical body.

6. Protective shield of spirit lacking a physical body (discarnate).

Fig. 127. Maximum negative lunar impact occurring during a full moon. This renders the virtually unprotected physical body vulnerable to invasion by a foreign spirit.

1. Physical body.

2. Spirit having a physical body (incarnate).

3. Protective shield of the physical body.

3*. Spirit's protective shield.

4. Cord connecting physical body and spirit.

5. Spirit lacking a physical body.

6. Protective shield of spirit lacking a physical body (discarnate).

Fig. 128. Discarnate spirit taking possession of physical body with a weak protective shield.

1. Physical body.

2. Spirit having a physical body (incarnate).

3. Protective shield of the physical body.

3*. Spirit's protective shield.

4. Cord connecting physical body and spirit.

5. Protective shield of the discarnate spirit.

Fig. 129. Weak protective shield under minimal negative lunar impact.

1. Physical body.

2. Spirit having a physical body (incarnate).
3. Protective shield of the physical body.
- 3*. Spirit's protective shield.
4. Cord connecting physical body and spirit.
5. Astral animal.
6. Protective shield of astral animal.

Fig. 130. Maximum negative lunar impact occurring during a full moon. This renders a human physical body susceptible to invasion by an astral animal.

1. Physical body.
2. Spirit having a physical body (incarnate).
3. Protective shield of the physical body.
- 3*. Spirit's protective shield.
4. Cord connecting physical body and spirit.
5. Astral animal.
6. Protective shield of astral animal.

Fig. 131. Possession of a human physical body by an astral animal.

1. Physical body.
2. Spirit having a physical body (incarnate).
3. Protective shield of the physical body.
- 3*. Spirit's protective shield.
4. Cord connecting physical body and spirit.
5. Astral animal.
6. Protective shield of astral animal.

I. Invasion of the physical body by a spirit of the opposite sex

Fig. 132. Invasion of a genetically male physical body by a female spirit and development of a male physical body; restoration of the qualitative level of the female spirit's etheric body during its development in a male physical body.

1. Physical body.
2. Etheric body.
3. Astral body.
4. First mental body.

h; i; j – qualitative barrier between levels.

Fig. 133. Restoration of the qualitative level of the female spirit's body during development in a male physical body.

1. Physical body.

2. Etheric body.

3. Astral body.

4. First mental body.

h; i; j – qualitative barrier between levels.

Fig. 134. Restoration of the qualitative level of the female spirit's first mental body during development in a male physical body.

1. Physical body.

2. Etheric body.

3. Astral body.

4. First mental body.

h; i; j – qualitative barrier between levels.

Fig. 135. Invasion of a genetically female body by a male spirit and development of a female physical body; restoration of the qualitative level of the male spirit's etheric body during development in a female physical body.

1. Physical body.

2. Etheric body.

3. Astral body.

4. First mental body.

h; i; j – qualitative barrier between levels.

Fig. 136. Restoration of the qualitative level of the male spirit's astral body during development in a female physical body.

1. Physical body.

2. Etheric body.

3. Astral body.

4. First mental body.

h; i; j – qualitative barrier between levels.

Fig. 137. Restoration of the qualitative level of a male spirit's mental body during development in a female physical body.

1. Physical body.

2. Etheric body.

3. Astral body.

4. First mental body.

h; i; j – qualitative barrier between levels.

Fig. 138. Simultaneous invasion of male and female spirits into a genetically male body and development of a female physical body; restoration of the qualitative level of the spirits' etheric bodies during development in a male physical body.

1. Physical body.
2. Etheric body.
3. Astral body.
4. First mental body.
- 2'. Etheric body of female spirit.
- 3'. Astral body of female spirit.
- 4'. First mental body of female spirit.

h; i; j; h'; i'; j' – qualitative barrier between levels.

Fig. 139. Restoration of the qualitative levels of the male and female spirits' astral bodies during development in a single male physical body.

1. Physical body.
2. Etheric body.
3. Astral body.
4. First mental body.
- 2'. Etheric body of female spirit.
- 3'. Astral body of female spirit.
- 4'. First mental body of female spirit.

h; i; j; h'; i'; j' – qualitative barrier between levels.

Fig. 140. Restoration of the qualitative levels of the male and female spirits' mental bodies during development in a male physical body.

1. Physical body.
2. Etheric body.
3. Astral body.
4. First mental body.
- 2'. Etheric body of female spirit.
- 3'. Astral body of female spirit.
- 4'. First mental body of female spirit.

h; i; j; h'; i'; j' – qualitative barrier between levels.

Fig. 141. Simultaneous invasion of male and female spirits into a genetically female body; restoration of the qualitative level of the male and female spirits' etheric bodies during development in a female physical body.

1. Physical body.
2. Etheric body of female spirit.
3. Astral body of female spirit.
4. First mental body of female spirit.
- 2'. Etheric body of male spirit.
- 3'. Astral body of male spirit.
- 4'. First mental body of male spirit.

h; i; j; h'; i'; j' – qualitative barrier between levels.

Fig. 142. Restoration of the qualitative levels of the male and female spirits' astral bodies during a simultaneous development in a female physical body.

1. Physical body.
2. Etheric body of female spirit.
3. Astral body of female spirit.
4. First mental body of female spirit.
- 2'. Etheric body of male spirit.
- 3'. Astral body of male spirit.
- 4'. First mental body of male spirit.

h; i; j; h'; i'; j' – qualitative barrier between levels.

Fig. 143. Restoration of the qualitative levels of the male and female spirits' mental bodies during a simultaneous development in a female physical body.

1. Physical body.
2. Etheric body of female spirit.
3. Astral body of female spirit.
4. First mental body of female spirit.
- 2'. Etheric body of male spirit.
- 3'. Astral body of male spirit.
- 4'. First mental body of male spirit.

h; i; j; h'; i'; j' – qualitative barrier between levels

J. Structure of the microcosm

Fig. 144. Impact of a hydrogen atom on its surrounding space; creation of secondary space curvature.

1. Physical sphere.
2. Etheric sphere.

H – hydrogen atom nucleus.

S – hydrogen atom electron.

Fig. 145. Impact of a uranium atom on its surrounding space; breakthrough into the etheric sphere by the uranium atom.

1. Physical sphere.

2. Etheric sphere.

S, P, D, F – electron shells of the uranium atom

U – uranium atom nucleus

Fig. 146. Negative spin of the electron; moving matter coagulates in the peripheral zone of space curvature of the first type.

1. Electron.

3. Peripheral zone of space curvature of the first type.

Fig. 146a. Positive spin of the electron; moving matter coagulates in the peripheral zone of space curvature of the second type.

2. Electron.

4. Peripheral zone of space curvature of the second type.

Fig. 147. Creation of an electron couple during the bonding of an atom into molecules.

1. Electron with negative spin.

2. Electron with positive spin.

3. Peripheral zone of curvature of the first type.

4. Peripheral zone of curvature of the second type.

Fig. 148. Tunnel effect phenomenon produced by nuclei of various elements having different impacts on their surrounding space. At the borderline between substances of different composition, a differential arises between their space curvatures – which is precisely what causes the tunnel effect.

1. Physical sphere.

2. Etheric sphere.

3. Structure of a first-type substance.

4. Structure of a second-type substance.

5. Matter coagulates as it flows through the zone of non-uniform space curvature.

Fig. 149. Endothermic reaction; absorption of fragmented matter from the surrounding space during formation of molecules, when combining atoms of insufficient space curvature are connected to the dominant atom.

1. Dominant atom.

2. Combining atom.

J_1 – levels of the dominant atom's curvature.

J_2 – levels of the Combining atom's curvature .

E – matter absorbed from the surrounding space.

Fig. 150. Exothermic reaction; release of a portion of the combined matter into the surrounding space; this occurs during the buildup of molecules when combining atoms having a more than sufficient space curvature are joined to a combining atom.

1. Dominant atom.

2. Combining atom.

J_1 – levels of the dominant atom's curvature.

J_2 – levels of the Combining atom's curvature .

E – matter absorbed from the surrounding space.

K. Structure of the macrocosm

Fig. 151. Three space universes created by the mergence of various primary matters.

λ_6 – dimension of a space universe created by the mergence of six forms of matter.

λ_7 – dimension of a space universe from the mergence of seven forms of matter.

λ_8 – dimension of a space universe from the mergence of eight forms of matter.

Fig. 152. A star created by merging a space universe of our dimension with a space universe of greater dimension.

λ_6 – dimension of a space universe from six forms of matter.

λ_7 – dimension of a space universe from seven forms of matter.

λ_8 – dimension of a space universe from eight forms of matter.

λ_a – dimension of the star.

Fig. 153. A black hole created by the mergence of a space universe of our dimension with a space universe of smaller dimension.

λ_6 – dimension of a space universe from six forms of matter.

λ_7 – dimension of a space universe from seven forms of matter.

λ_8 – dimension of a space universe from eight forms of matter.

λ_f – dimension of the black hole.

Fig. 154. In every space universe matter flows in through the stars and out through the black holes.

λ_6 – dimension of a space universe from six forms of matter.

λ_7 – dimension of a space universe from seven forms of matter.

λ_8 – dimension of a space universe from eight forms of matter.

λ_a – dimension of the star.

λ_f – dimension of the black hole.

L. Stages of stellar evolution

Figs. 155, 156, 157, 158, 159. After “birth”, a star passes through several stages of evolution, all of which are related to changes in the dimension of its surrounding space. In its final stage, a star becomes either a black hole or a neutron star, depending upon its initial size and mass.

λ_6 – dimension of a space universe from six forms of matter.

λ_7 – dimension of a space universe from seven forms of matter.

λ_8 – dimension of a space universe from eight forms of matter.

λ_b – dimension of a yellow giant.

λ_c – dimension of a red giant.

λ_d – dimension of a red midget.

λ_e – dimension of a neutron star.

λ_f – dimension of a black hole.

M. The genesis of planetary systems

Fig. 160. In the course of its evolution, sometimes a star is unable to accommodate the passage of masses of matter moving through the space mergence zone. A portion of the mass then starts accumulating in the mergence zone on one side of the passage route.

λ_6 – dimension of a space universe created by the mergence of six forms of matter.

λ_7 – dimension of a space universe from seven forms of matter.

λ_8 – dimension of a space universe from eight forms of matter.

λ_c – dimension of a red giant.

Fig. 161. Explosion of a supernova, causing deformation of its surrounding space and discharge of vast amounts of accumulated matter.

λ_6 – dimension of a space universe created by the mergence of six forms of matter.

λ_7 – dimension of a space universe from seven forms of matter.

λ_8 – dimension of a space universe from eight forms of matter.

Fig. 162. Distribution of discharged matter following explosion of a supernova through the zone of dimension deformation surrounding it.

λ_6 – dimension of a space universe created by the mergence of six forms of matter.

λ_7 – dimension of a space universe from seven forms of matter.

λ_8 – dimension of a space universe from eight forms of matter.

Fig. 163. The creation of planets from matter discharged by an exploded supernova in the zones of space dimension deformation.

λ_6 – dimension of a space universe created by the mergence of six forms of matter.

λ_7 – dimension of a space universe from seven forms of matter.

λ_8 – dimension of a space universe from eight forms of matter.

Fig. 164. Destruction of the planet Phaeton and creation of our solar system's asteroid belt.

λ_6 – dimension of a space universe created by the mergence of six forms of matter.

λ_7 – dimension of a space universe from seven forms of matter.

λ_8 – dimension of a space universe from eight forms of matter.

N. Superspaces

Fig. 165. The relative locations of the space universes in our metauniverse.

1. Boundaries of the metauniverse.

2. Space universes created by the mergence of diverse amounts of primary matters.

Fig. 166. The mergence of two matrix spaces having different dimensional quantization coefficients.

λ'_1 – dimension of the first matrix space.

λ'_2 – dimension of the second matrix space.

λ'_{12} – dimension of the matrix space mergence zone.

$\Delta\lambda_1$ – range of fluctuation of the first matrix space dimension.

$\Delta\lambda_2$ – range of fluctuation of the second matrix space dimension.

Fig. 167. The discharge of primary matter through a matrix space mergence zone during superexplosion, when the mergence zone is unable to accommodate passage of the entire mass of moving matter.

λ'_1 – dimension of the first matrix space.

λ'_2 – dimension of the second matrix space.

λ'_{12} – dimension of the matrix space mergence zone.

$\Delta\lambda_1$ – range of fluctuation of the first matrix space dimension.

$\Delta\lambda_2$ – range of fluctuation of the second matrix space dimension.

Fig. 168. During an explosion, a disturbance in the dimension of space around

the mergence zone occurs. The zones of dimensionality thus created start accumulating the matter issuing from the explosion.

λ'_1 – dimension of the first matrix space.

λ'_2 – dimension of the second matrix space.

λ'_{12} – dimension of the matrix space mergence zone.

$\Delta\lambda_1$ – range of fluctuation of the first matrix space dimension.

$\Delta\lambda_2$ – range of fluctuation of the second matrix space dimension.

Fig. 169. The creation of metauniverses in zones of non-uniform space dimensionality.

1. Zone where no conditions exist for mergence of primary matters.
2. Zone with conditions for mergence of two forms of matter.
3. Zone with conditions for mergence of three forms of matter.
4. Zone with conditions for mergence of four forms of matter.
5. Zone with conditions for mergence of five forms of matter.
6. Zone with conditions for mergence of six forms of matter.
7. Zone with conditions for mergence of seven forms of matter.
8. Zone with conditions for mergence of eight forms of matter.
9. Zone with conditions for mergence of nine forms of matter.
10. Zone of matrix space mergence.
11. Metauniverses.
12. Zones of dimension deformation.

Fig. 170. First-order superspace.

1. Zone of matrix space mergence.
2. Metauniverses.

Fig. 171. First-order superspaces – front and side view.

1. Zone of matrix space mergence.
2. Metauniverses created from nine forms of matter.
3. Metauniverses created from eight forms of matter.
4. Metauniverses created from seven forms of matter.
5. Metauniverses created from six forms of matter.
6. Metauniverses created from five forms of matter.
7. Metauniverses created from four forms of matter.
8. Metauniverses created from three forms of matter.

9. Metauniverses created from two forms of matter.

Fig. 172. Second-order superspaces.

1. Metauniverses created from ten forms of matter.

2. Second-order superspaces.

Fig. 173. Third-order superspaces.

1. Metauniverses created from eleven forms of matter.

2. Third-order superspaces.

Fig. 174. Fourth-order superspaces.

1. Metauniverses created from twelve forms of matter.

Fig. 175. Fifth-order superspaces.

1. Central zone of merging matrix spaces.

2. Metauniverses created from thirteen forms of matter.

3. Metauniverses created from twelve forms of matter.

4. Metauniverses created from eleven forms of matter.

5. Metauniverses created from ten forms of matter.

6. Metauniverses created from nine forms of matter.

7. Metauniverses created from eight forms of matter.

8. Metauniverses created from seven forms of matter.

9. Metauniverses created from six forms of matter.

10. Metauniverses created from five forms of matter.

11. Metauniverses created from four forms of matter.

12. Metauniverses created from three forms of matter.

13. Metauniverses created from two forms of matter.

14. End zone of merging matrix spaces.

Fig. 176. A six-ray.

Fig. 177. An anti six-ray.

Contents

Volume 1

Introduction

The Third Appeal to Mankind.

Chapter 1. The formation of planet Earth: The synthesis of non-living matter.

Chapter 2. The emergence of life on Earth.

Chapter 3. Psi-fields in nature and in the evolution of intelligence.

Chapter 4. Formation of the ecological system of planet Earth.

Chapter 5. Evolutionary cycles on planet Earth: The multidimensionality of life.

Chapter 6. Evolution of the spirit, the organism, and intelligence.

Appendix 1. Derivation of the intraspecies selfregulation formula.

Appendix 2. Derivation of the formula for ecological systems.

Appendix 3. List of illustrations.